THE HISTORY OF OUR SAVIOUR, *JESUS CHRIST*,

Related in the

Words of the Scripture.

Containing

In Order of Time all the EVENTS and DISCOURSES recorded in the *Four Evangelists*, &c.

WITH

Some Short NOTES for the help of Ordinary READERS.

LONDON:

Printed by *W. B.* for *A.* and *J. Churchill*, at the *Black Swan* in *Pater Noster Row*, 1705.

THE HISTORY OF OUR SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

BRITISH MUSEUM

Advertiſement.

IT has been judg'd by ſeveral, that a contim'd Hiſtory of our Bleſſed Saviour in order of Time, wholly in the Words of the Scripture, would be of greater uſe to the more ordinary ſort of Readers, than Harmonies of the Evangeliſts. Becauſe that thoſe who are not very converſant in Books, are rather confounded, than help'd, by the ſeveral Collumns and Breaks, which are neceſſary in ſuch a Work.

Such a Hiſtory as here abovemention'd, the Reader will find in the following Sheets; divided only into Sections, according to the different Paſſages, and Acts, of our Saviour.

The Evangeliſt, Chapter, and Verſe, out of which the Hiſtory is tranſcrib'd; is noted all along in the outward *Margin. And whenever there is occaſion to change from one Evangeliſt to another, there is a Star* [*] *put to ſhew where the change comes in; and the Evangeliſt, Chapter and Verſe, is ſet over againſt that Verſe in the* outward *Margin.*

When the ſame Fact, or any Circumſtances concerning our Saviour, is related by more than one, or all the Four Evangeliſts; if any have a mind to turn to their Bibles, to ſee how the ſame things are expreſs'd by the other Evangeliſts, they are refer'd by a ſmall Letter as [a] [b] &c. *to the* inward *Margin, where they will find the Evangeliſt, Chapter, and Verſe noted.*

The

The Age of our Saviour, and Year of his Miniſtry, is expreſs'd all along at the top of the inward *Margin; and the place of action (as far as it could be known) is ſet always in the* outward *Margin.*

There is alſo here and there, Notes, for the Explanation of ſome Words, and Cuſtoms, as for Example in Sect. II. Courſe of Abia.

There is annex'd a Map of the Countrys through which our Saviour travell'd; and the Places, and Towns are named the ſame as in the Goſpels.

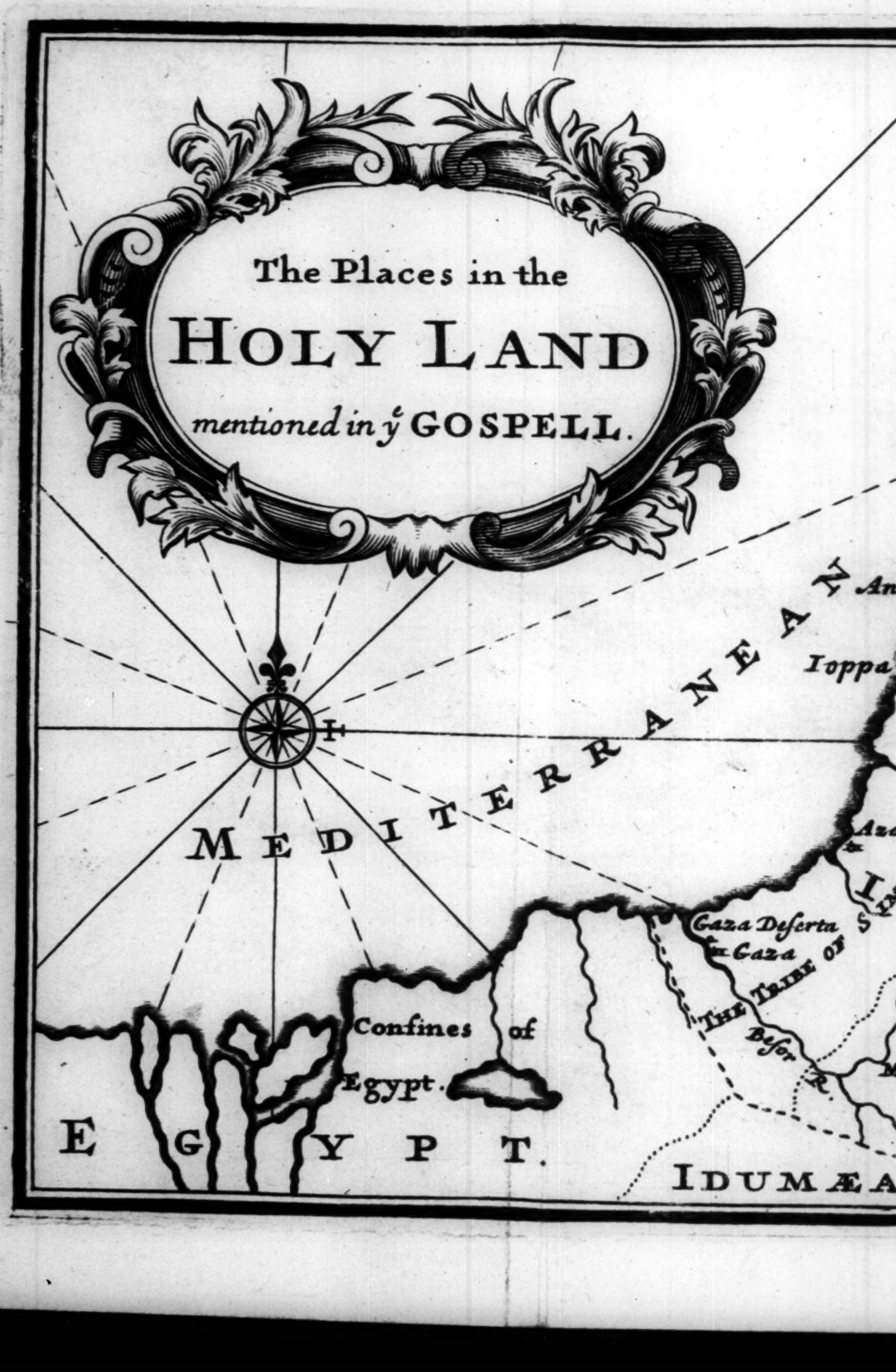
It has been neceſſary ſometimes the better to join the Senſe to add a Word, as [and] [he] and ſuch like, but the Reader will ſee it makes no alteration as to the true meaning of thoſe places, and that he may the more readily obſerve it, thoſe Words are always put between two Hooks, and in the Italick Character.

28 SEGD

THE

28 SE60

The Places in the HOLY LAND mentioned in ye GOSPELL.



Sarepta
Sidon
SYRIA.
TRIBE OF ASHER.
TRIBE OF NAPHTHALI.
Tyre
Ptolemais
Cæsarea Philippi
Abilena.
MANASSEH
THE SEA.
THE TRIBE OF ZABULON.
Capernaum
Iordan R.
TRACHONITIS.
Chorazin
Cana
Bethsaida
GALILEA
Nazareth
Genasa
Magedan
TRIBE OF GAD.
Cæsarea
Mt Tabor
Naim
Gerasa
TRIBE OF ISSACHAR.
Sea of Galilee.
Bethsaida
THE HALF TR: OF MANASSEH.
Antipatris
Gadara
Ioppa
Lidda
Samaria
Iscariotb
Bethsan
ITURÆA.
SAMARIA
Sichem
Bethabara
TRIBE OF EPHRAIM.
Arimathea
Ennon
Ephrem
TRIBE OF BENJAMIN.
Azotus
Iericho
Ierusalem
Bethany
Emaus
Bethlehem
IUDEA.
Iordan River
TRIBE OF RUBEN.
TRIBE OF GAD.
Sodom
The Dead Sea.
Gomorrah
Mountains of Iudea
THE DESERTS OF ARABIA.

THE HISTORY

Of our Saviour JESUS CHRIST, Related in the Words of the Scriptures.

SECT. I.

INTRODUCTION.

FOraſmuch as many have taken Luke i.
in hand to ſet forth in order a
declaration of thoſe things
which are moſt ſurely believed
amongſt us, even as they deliver'd them 2.
unto us, which from the beginning were
Eye-witneſſes and Miniſters of the word.
It ſeemed good to me alſo, having had 3.
perfect underſtanding of all things from
the very firſt, to write unto thee in order,
moſt excellent Theophilus, that thou 4.
mighteſt know the certainty of thoſe
things wherein thou haſt been inſtructed.

Temple.
Luke i.

SECT. II.

The conception of John the Baptist foretold by an Angel.

5. THere was in the days of Herod the
King of Judea, a certain prieſt
named Zacharias, of the (a) courſe of
Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters
of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.
6. And they were both righteous before God,
walking in all the commandments and
7. ordinances of the Lord, blameleſs. And
they had no child, becauſe that Elizabeth
was barren, and they both were *now* well
ſtricken in Years.
8. And it came to paſs, that while he
executed the Prieſt's office before God in
9. order of his courſe, according to the
cuſtom of the Prieſt's office, his lott was
to burn incenſe when he went into the
temple of the Lord.
10. And the whole multitude of people
were praying without at the time of
11. incenſe, and there appeared unto him
an Angel of the Lord ſtanding on the right
12. ſide of the altar of incenſe. And when
Zacharias ſaw him he was troubled,
13. and fear fell upon him. But the Angel
ſaid unto him, *Fear not, Zacharias, for*

(a) *Courſe of Abia.* There were 24 Courſes of the Prieſts which officiated in their turns, whereof that of *Abiah* was the eighth. How the diſtribution was made, and what were the name and order of each may be ſeen 1 *Chron.* xxiv.

thy

thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Eliza- Temple.
beth shall bear thee a Son, and thou shalt Luke i.
call his name John. And thou shalt have 14.
joy and gladness, and many shall rejoyce
at his Birth. For he shall be great in 15.
the sight of the Lord, and shall drink
neither wine nor strong drink, and he
shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even
from his mothers womb, and many of 16.
the children of Israel shall he turn to
the Lord their God; and he shall go be- 17.
fore him in the spirit and power of Elias,
to turn the hearts of the fathers to the
children, and the disobedient to the
wisedom of the just, to make ready a peo-
ple prepared for the Lord.

And Zacharias said unto the Angel, 18.
whereby shall I know this? For I am an
old Man, and my wife well stricken in
years.

And the Angel answering said unto 19.
him, *I am Gabriel that stand in the pre-*
sence of God, and am sent to speak un-
to thee, and to shew thee these glad ti-
dings. And behold thou shalt be dumb, 20.
and not able to speak, until the day that
these things shall be performed, because
thou believest not my words, which shall
be fulfilled in their season.

And the people waited for Zacharias, 21.
and marvelled that he tarried so long
in the Temple, and when he came out, 22.
he could not speak unto them: and they
perceived that he had seen a vision in
the Temple: for he beckned unto them,
and remained speechless.

Temple. Luke i.

And it came to paſs, that as ſoon as the days of his miniſtration were accom-
23. pliſhed, he departed to his own houſe.
24. And after thoſe days his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid herſelf five months,
25. ſaying, thus hath the Lord dealt with me, to take away my reproach among men.

SECT. III.

Nazareth.

The conception and birth of Chriſt declared to Mary by the Angel.

26. AND in the ſixth month, [*of Elizabeth's being with Child*] the Angel Gabriel was ſent from God, unto a
27. City of Galilee, named Nazareth. To a virgin eſpouſed to a man whoſe name was Joſeph, of the houſe of David, and
28. the virgins name was Mary. And the Angel came in unto her, and ſaid, *Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: bleſſed art thou among women.*
29. And when ſhe ſaw him, ſhe was troubled at his ſaying, and caſt in her mind what manner of ſalutation this ſhould be.
30. And the Angel ſaid unto her, *Fear not, Mary, for thou haſt found favour with*
31. *God. And behold, thou ſhalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a Son, and*
32. *ſhalt call his Name Jeſus. He ſhall be great, and ſhall be called the Son of the Higheſt; and the Lord God ſhall give unto him the throne of his father David.*
33. *And he ſhall reign over the houſe of Jacob*

cob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Nazareth. Luke i.

Then said Mary unto the Angel, *How* 34.
shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

And the Angel answered, and said un- 35.
to her, *The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God; and behold thy* 36.
Cozen Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a Son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called Barren; For with God nothing shall be 37.
impossible.

And Mary said, *Behold the handmaid* 38.
of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word. And the Angel departed from her.

SECT. IV.

The Salutation of Mary and Elizabeth.

The hill country of Judea.

AND Mary arose in those Days, 39.
and went into the hill Country with haste, into a City of Juda, and en- 40.
tred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth. And it came to pass 41.
that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost, and she spake out with 42.
a loud voice, and said, "Blessed *art* thou
"among Women, and blessed *is* the fruit

The hill country of Judea. Luke i.

" of thy womb; and whence is this to
" me, that the mother of my Lord ſhould
" come to me? For lo, as ſoon as the voice
43. " of thy ſalutation ſounded in mine ears,
44. " the babe leaped in my womb for joy;
45. " and bleſſed *is* ſhe that believed: for
" there ſhall be a performance of thoſe
" things which were told her from the
" Lord.
46. And Mary ſaid, " My ſoul doth mag-
47. " nifie the Lord, and my ſpirit hath re-
48. " joyced in God my Saviour. For he
" hath regarded the low eſtate of his
" handmaiden: for behold from hence-
" forth all generations ſhall call me bleſ-
49. " ſed. For he that is mighty hath done
" to me great things, and holy is his Name.
50. " And his mercy is on them that fear
" him, from generation to generation.
51. " He hath ſhew'd ſtrength with his arm,
" he hath ſcattered the proud in the ima-
52. " gination of their hearts. He hath put
" down the mighty from their ſeats,
53. " and exalted them of low degree. He
" hath filled the hungry with good things,
" and the rich he hath ſent empty away.
54. " He hath holpen his ſervant Iſrael, in re-
55. " membrance of *his* mercy; As he ſpake
" to our Fathers, to Abraham and to his
" ſeed for ever.
56. And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own houſe.

SECT.

The hill country of Judea. Luke i.

SECT. V.

The birth of John the baptist.

NOW Elizabeth's full time came, that 57.
she should be deliver'd; and she
brought forth a son. And her neighbours, 58.
and her cousins heard how the Lord had
shewed great mercy upon her, and they
rejoyced with her. And it came to pass, 59.
that on the eighth day they came to cir-
cumcise the child; and they called him
Zacharias, after the name of his father.
And his mother answered and said, *Not* 60.
so, but he shall be called John. And they 61.
said unto her, *There is none of thy kin-*
dred that is called by this name. And 62.
they made signs to his father, how he
would have him called. And he asked 63.
for a writing table and wrote, saying,
His name is John. And they marvelled 64.
all. And his mouth was opened imme-
diately, and his tongue *loosed*, and he spake
and praised God, and fear came on all 65.
that dwelt round about them: and all
these sayings were noised abroad through-
out all the hill country of Judea. And 66.
all they that had heard them, laid them
up in their hearts, saying, *What manner*
of Child shall this be? And the hand of
the Lord was with him.

And his Father Zacharias was filled 67.
with the holy Ghost, and prophesied say-
ing "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, 68.
" for he hath visited and redeemed his 69.

The hill country of Judea. Luke i.

" people, and hath raiſed up an horn of
" ſalvation for us in the houſe of his ſer-
" vant David; as he ſpake by the mouth
70. " of his holy prophets, which have been
" ſince the world began; That we ſhould
71. " be ſaved from our enemies, and from
" the hand of all that hate us. To per-
72. " form the mercy *promiſed* to our fa-
" thers, and to remember his holy co-
" venant, The oath which he ſware to
73. " our Father Abraham, that he would
" grant unto us, that we, being delive-
74. " red out of the hands of our enemies,
" might ſerve him without fear, in ho-
75. " lineſs and righteouſneſs before him
" all the days of our life. And thou
76. " child ſhalt be called the prophet of
" the Higheſt: for thou ſhalt go before
" the face of the Lord to prepare his
" ways; to give knowledge of ſalvation
77. " unto his people, by the remiſſion of
" their ſins, through the tender mercy
78. " of our God; whereby the day-ſpring
" from on high hath viſited us, to give
79. " light to them that ſit in darkneſs, and
" in the ſhadow of death, to guide our
" feet into the way of peace.

80. And the child grew, and waxed ſtrong in ſpirit, and was in the deſerts till the day of his ſhewing unto Iſrael.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 1.

SECT. VI.

The birth of Christ. Bethlehem. 1

NOW the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise. 18. Mat. i.

When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband being 19.
(a) a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought 20.
on these things, behold the Angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, *Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy Wife; for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth* 21.
a son, and thou shalt call his name (b) *Jesus: for he shall save his People from their Sins.* (Now all this was done that 22.
it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet [Isai. VII. 14.] saying, *Behold a virgin shall be with* 23.
child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is *God with us.*)

Then Joseph being raised from sleep 24.
did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took *unto him* his wife; And 25.

(a) *Just* in Hebrew is put for *gentle* and *benign.*
(b) *Jesus* signifies *Saviour.*

knew

Bethlehem. knew her not till ſhe had brought forth Anno
Mat. i. her firſt born Son; and he called his name Ætat. 1.
Jeſus.

Luke ii. 1. And it came to paſs in thoſe days,
that there went out a decree from
(c) *Ceſar Auguſtus*, that all the world
2. ſhould be taxed. (And this taxing was
firſt made when Cyrenius was governour
3. of Syria) And all went to be taxed eve-
4. ry one into his own City. And Joſeph
alſo went up from Galilee out of the
City of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the
City of David, which is called Bethle-
hem, (becauſe he was of the houſe and
5. lineage of David) to be taxed with Ma-
ry his eſpouſed wife, being great with
6. child. And ſo it was, that while they
were there, the days were accompliſhed
7. that ſhe ſhould be delivered. And ſhe
brought forth her firſt born ſon, and
wrapped him in ſwadling cloaths, and
laid him in a manger, becauſe there was
no room for them in the inn.
8. And there were in the ſame country
ſhepherds abiding in the field, keeping
9. watch over their flock by night. And lo,
the Angel of the Lord came upon them,
and the glory of the Lord ſhone round
about them, and they were ſore afraid.
10. And the Angel ſaid unto them, *Fear not,*
for behold I bring you good tidings of
great joy, which ſhall be to all people.
11. *For unto you is born this day, in the*

(c) *Ceſar Auguſtus* was Emperour of Rome, and to him Judea was tributary.

(d) City

Anno Ætat. 1.

(d) *City of David, a Saviour, which is* Bethlehem.
(e) *Christ the Lord. And this shall be a* Luke ii.
sign unto you; ye shall find the babe 12.
wrapped in swadling cloaths lying in a manger.

And suddenly there was with the An- 13.
gel a multitude of the heavenly host prai-
sing God, and saying, *Glory to God in* 14.
the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.

And it came to pass, as the Angels 15.
were gone away from them into heaven,
the shepherds said one to another, *Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.* And 16.
they came with haste, and found Mary
and Joseph, and the babe lying in a man-
ger. And when they had seen *it*, they 17.
made known abroad the saying which was
told them concerning this child. And all 18.
they that heard *it*, wondred at those
things which were told them by the she-
pherds. But Mary kept all these things 19.
and pondered them in her heart.

And the shepherds returned, glorify- 20.
ing and praising God, for all the things
that they had heard and seen, as it was
told unto them.

(d) *City of David*, that is Bethlehem.
(e) *Christ* in Greek is the same which Messiah in Hebrew. See §. 19.

SECT.

SECT. VII.

Christ's Genealogy.

Mat. i. THE book of the generation of Jesus Christ
1. the son of David,
2. the son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac, Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and
3. his brethren, and Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and Phares begat Esrom, and
4. Esrom begat Aram, and Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson
5. begat Salmon, and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse,
6. and Jesse begat David the King, and David the King begat Salomon of her *that had been the Wife* of
7. Urias, and Salomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and
8. Abia begat Asa, and Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat

Luke iii. *being* (as was supposed) the son of Joseph,
23. which was *the son* of
24. Heli, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Janna, which was *the son* of Joseph,
25. which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, which was *the*
26. *son* of Nagge, which was *the son* of Maath, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the*
27. *son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rhesa, which was *the son* of Zorobabel, which was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the*

gat Ozias, and Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezechias, and Ezekias begat Manasses; and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias, and Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren about the time they were carried away to Babylon. And after they were brought to Babylon Jeconias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel, and Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor, and Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud, and Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan and Matthan begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Joseph. Mat. i. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16.

the son of Neri, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Addi, which was *the son* of Cosam, which was *the son* of Elmodam, which was *the son* of Er, which was *the son* of Jose, which was *the son* of Eliezer, which was *the son* of Jorim, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Simeon, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Jonan, which was *the son* of Eliakim, which was *the son* of Melea, which was *the son* of Menan, which was *the son* of Mattatha, which was *the son* of Nathan, which was *the son* of David, which was *the son* of Jesse, which was *the son* of Obed, which was *the son* of Booz, which was *the son* of Salmon, which was *the son* of Naasson, which Luk. iii. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32.

Luk. iii. which was *the son* of
33. Aminadab, which was *the son* of Aram, which was *the son* of Esrom, which was *the son* of Phares, which was *the*
34. *son* of Judah, which was *the son* of Jacob, which was *the son* of Isaac, which was *the son* of Abraham, which was *the son* of Thara, which was *the*
35. *son* of Nachor, which was *the son* of Saruch, which was *the son* of Ragau, which was *the son* of Phalec, which was *the son* of Heber, which was *the son* of
36. Sala, which was *the son* of Cainan, which was *the son* of Arphaxad, which was *the son* of Sem, which was *the son* of Noe, which was *the son* of
37. Lamech, which was *the son* of Mathusala, which was *the son* of Enoch, which was *the son* of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was *the*
38. *son* of Cainan, which was *the son* of Enos, which

Anno Ætat. 1.

which was *the son* of Bethlehem. Seth, which was *the* Mat. i. *son* of Adam, which was *the son* of God.

the husband of Mary, of whom was born 16. Jesus, who is called Christ.

So all the generations from Abraham 17. to David *are* fourteen generations: and from David until the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

SECT. VIII.

Christ circumcised.

AND when eight days were accom- Luk. ii. plished for the circumcising of the 21. Child, his name was called Jesus, which was so named of the Angel before he was conceived in the womb.

SECT. IX.

The coming and departure of the wise men.

NOw when Jesus was born in *Bethle-* 1. Mat. ii. *hem* of *Judea* in the days of *Herod* the King, behold there came wise men from the East to *Jerusalem*, saying, *Where is he that is born King of the* 2. *Jews? For we have seen his star in the East, and are come to worship him.*

When

Bethlehem. Mat. ii.

When *Herod* the King had heard *these* Anno Ætat. 1.
things he was troubled, and all *Jerusa-*
3. *lem* with him, and when he had gather-
4. ed all the chief Priests and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of
5. them *where Christ should be born.* And they said unto him *in Bethlehem of Ju-*
dea: for thus it is written by the Pro-
6. phet [*Micah* V. 2.] *And thou Bethlehem in the land of Juda, art not the least a-*
mong the Princes of Juda; for out of
thee shall come a Governour that shall
rule my people Israel.
7. Then *Herod* when he had privily call'd the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appear'd.
8. And he sent them to *Bethlehem*, and said, *Go and search diligently for the*
young child, and when ye have found
him bring me word again, that I may
9. *come and worship him also.* When they had heard the King, they departed; and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood
10. over where the young child was. When they saw the star they rejoiced with ex-
11. ceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold and frank-
12. incense, and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

SECT.

Anno. Ætat. 1. Temple. Luk. ii.

SECT. X.

The presenting of Christ in the Temple.

AND when the days of [*Mary's*] pu- 22.
rification, according to the Law of
Moses, were accomplished, they brought
[*Jesus*] to Jerusalem to present him to
the Lord, (as it is written in the Law of 23.
the Lord, *Every male that openeth the*
womb shall be called holy to the Lord)
and to offer a sacrifice according to that 24.
which is said in the Law of the Lord,
a pair of turtle doves or two young pi-
geons. And behold there was a man in 25.
Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon; and
the same man was just and devout, wait-
ing for the consolation of Israel: and
the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it 26.
was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost,
that he should not see death, before he
had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came 27.
by the Spirit into the Temple: and when
the Parents brought in the Child Jesus,
to do for him after the custom of the
Law, then took he him up in his arms 28.
and blessed God and said,

" Lord, now lettest thou thy servant 29.
" depart in peace according to thy word.
" For mine eyes have seen thy Salva- 30.
" tion: which thou hast prepared be- 31.
" fore the face of all people. A light 32.
" to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory
" of thy people Israel.

Temple. Luke ii. And Joſeph and his Mother marvelled Anno Ætat. 1.
33. at thoſe things which were ſpoken of him.
34. And Simeon bleſſed them, and ſaid unto *Mary* his Mother, *Behold this child is ſet for the fall and riſing again of many in Iſrael; and for a ſign which ſhall*
35. *be ſpoken againſt: (yea a ſword ſhall peirce thro' thine own ſoul alſo) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.*
36. And there was one Anna a propheteſs, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aſer; ſhe was of a great age, and had lived with an husband ſeven years from
37. her virginity: and ſhe was a widow of about fourſcore and four years: which departed not from the temple, but ſerved God with faſtings and prayers night and
38. day; and ſhe coming in at that inſtant gave thanks likewiſe unto the Lord, and ſpake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jeruſalem.

SECT. XI.

Egypt. *Joſeph's flight with Chriſt into Egypt.*

Mat. ii. 13. AND when the [*wiſe men*] were departed, behold the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Joſeph in a dream, ſaying, *Ariſe, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will ſeek the young child to de-*
14. *ſtroy him.* When he aroſe, he took the young child and his mother by night,

and

Anno Ætat. 2. and departed into Ægypt; and was there Egypt.
until the death of Herod: that it might 15. Mat. ii.
be fulfilled which was spoken of the
Lord by the Prophet [*Hosea* xi. 1.] say-
ing, *out of Egypt have I called my Son.*

SECT. XII.

Slaughter of the Infants at Bethlehem. Bethlehem.

THen Herod when he saw that he was 16.
mocked of the wise men, was ex-
ceeding wrath, and sent forth, and slew
all the children that were in Bethlehem,
and in all the coasts thereof from two
years old and under, according to the
time which he had diligently enquired of
the wise men. Then was fulfilled that 17.
which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet,
[xxxi. 15.] saying, *In Rama was there a* 18.
voice heard, lamentation, and weeping,
and great mourning, Rachel weeping for
her children and would not be comfort-
ed because they are not.

SECT. XIII.

Return of Joseph from Egypt. Galilee.

BUT when Herod was dead, behold, 19.
an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a
dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, *Arise,* 20.
and take the young child and his mother
and go into the Land of Israel, for they
are dead which sought the young child's
life. And he arose, and took the young 21.

Galilee. child and his mother, and came into the Anno
Mat. ii. 22. land of Iſrael. But when he heard that Ætat. 12.
Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room
of his father Herod, he was afraid to go
thither: notwithſtanding, being warned
of God in a dream, he turned aſide in-
23. to the parts of Galilee: And he came and
Luk. ii. 39. [a] dwelt in a city called Nazareth, [*ha-* [a] Luk.ii.39.
ving] performed all things according to
Mat. ii. 23. the Law of the Lord, * that it might be
fulfilled which was ſpoken by the pro-
phets, *He ſhall be called a Nazarene.*

SECT. XIV.

Nazareth. *Chriſt's ſtay at Jeruſalem.*

Luk. ii. 40. AND the Child grew, and waxed
ſtrong in Spirit, filled with wiſ-
dom; and the grace of God was upon
him.
41. Now his parents went to Jeruſalem
every year at the feaſt of the paſſover.
42. And when he was twelve years old, they
went up to Jeruſalem after the cuſtom
43. of the feaſt. And when they had ful-
filled the days, as they returned, the
Child Jeſus tarried behind in Jeruſalem;
and Joſeph and his mother knew not *of*
44. *it.* But they ſuppoſing him to have been
in the company, went a days journey,
and they ſought him among *their* kinſ-
45. folk and acquaintance. And when they
found him not, they turned back again
46. to Jeruſalem ſeeking him. And it came
to paſs, that after three days they found
him

Anno Ætat. 29. him in the Temple, ſitting in the midſt of the Doctors, both hearing them, and asking them queſtions. And all that heard him were aſtoniſhed at his underſtanding and anſwers. And when they ſaw him they were amazed: and his mother ſaid unto him, *Son, why haſt thou thus dealt with us? behold thy father and I have ſought thee ſorrowing.* And he ſaid unto them, *How is it that ye ſought me? wiſt ye not that I muſt be about my Father's buſineſs:* And they underſtood not the ſaying which he ſpake unto them. And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was ſubject unto them. But his mother kept all theſe ſayings in her heart. And Jeſus increaſed in wiſdom and ſtature, and in favour with God and man.

Jeruſalem. Luk. ii. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. Nazareth. 52.

SECT. XV.

The preaching of John the Baptiſt.

THE beginning of the (a) Goſpel of Jeſus the Son of God. * Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of (b) Tiberius Ceſar, (c) Pontius Pilate being governour of Judea, and (d) Herod

Mar. i. Luk. iii.

(a) *Goſpel* is an old Engliſh word for good tidings.

(b) *Tiberius Ceſar* was Emperour of *Rome* and ſucceſſor to *Auguſtus*.

(c) *Pontius Pilate being Governour of Judea* under *Tiberius*.

(d) *Herod*. The ſon of that *Herod* the King who is mention'd in §. 13.

Wilderneſs of Judea. Luk. iii.

being (e) Tetrarch of (f) Galilee and his brother Philip Tetrarch of (g) Ituraea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lyſanias the Tetrarch of (h) Abilene, 2. Annas and Caiphas being the high prieſts, the word of God came unto John the ſon of Zacharias in the (i) wilderneſs, Mar. i. 4. * [*and he*] did baptize [a] in the wilderneſs, Luk. iii. 3. * and he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptiſm of repentance for the remiſſion of ſins, Mat. iii. 2. * and ſaying, Repent ye, for the kingdom of 3. heaven is at hand. [b] For this is he that was ſpoken of by the Prophets, Mar. i. 2. [*Malachi* iii. 1.] * *ſaying behold I ſend my meſſenger before thy face which ſhall prepare thy way before thee* [*and by E-*3. *ſaias* xl. 3.] *The voice of one crying in the wilderneſs, prepare ye the way of the* 5. *Lord, make his paths ſtraight.* * *Every valley ſhall be filled, and every mountain and hill ſhall be brought low; and the crooked ſhall be made ſtraight, and the rough ways ſhall be made ſmooth; and all fleſh ſhall ſee the ſalvation of God.* Mat. iii. 4. * [c] And the ſame John had his raiment

Anno Ætat. 29.

[a] Mat. iii. 1. Mar. i. 1.

[b] Mat. iii. 3. Luk. iii. 4.

[c] Mar. i. 6. 5.

(e) *Tetrarch* here is equivalent to King.

(f) *Galilee* the northern part of the Land of Canaan.

(g) *Ituraea and the region of Trachonitis*, part of the Land of Canaan lying north-eaſt of Galilee and the ſea of Tiberias.

(h) *Abilene*, a little country lying on the skirts of Canaan north-eaſtward.

(i) *Wilderneſs* ſignifies the country where the houſes ſtand ſcattered and at a diſtance one from another. See ii. Cor. xi. 26.

of

Anno Ætat. 29.

of Camels hair and a leathern girdle about his loins, and his meat was locusts and wild honey. Then went out to him Jeruſalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan, and were baptized of him in Jordan, confeſſing their ſins.

Wilderneſs of Judea. Mat. iii. 5. 6. Jordan.

[d] Luk. iii. 7. [d] But when he ſaw many of the (k) Phariſees and (l) Sadducees come to his Baptiſm, he ſaid unto them, *O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance. And think not to ſay within your ſelves, we have Abraham to our Father; for I ſay unto you, that God is able of theſe ſtones to raiſe up children unto Abraham. And now alſo the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and caſt into the fire.*

7. 8. Mat. iii. 9. 10.

And the people asked him, ſaying, *what ſhall we do then?*

10. Luk. iii.

He anſwereth and ſaith unto them, *He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none, and he that hath meat, let him do likewiſe.*

11.

Then came alſo (m) Publicans to be baptized, and ſaid unto him, *Maſter, what ſhall we do?*

12.

(k) *Phariſees*, a ſect amongſt the Jews that pretended to more than ordinary holineſs and an exact obſervance of the Law.

(l) *Sadducees*, a ſect amongſt the Jews that believed not the Reſurrection nor that there was Angels or Spirits.

(m) *Publicans* were gatherers of the Tolls and Cuſtoms, and in general diſrepute for extortion.

Jordan. Mat. iii. And he ſaid unto them *exact no more* 13. *than that which is appointed you.* Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

14. And the Soldiers likewiſe demanded of him, ſaying, *and what ſhall we do?* And he ſaid unto them, *Do violence to no man, neither accuſe any falſly, and be content with your* (n) *wages.*

SECT. XVI.

Chriſt's Baptiſm.

Mar. i. 9. AND it came to paſs in thoſe days, that Jeſus came from Nazareth of
Mat. iii. 13. Galilee * [a] to Jordan unto John to be bap- [a] Mar. i. 9.
14. tized of him. But John forbad him, ſaying, I have need to be baptized of
15. thee, and comeſt thou to me? And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid unto him, ſuffer *it to be ſo* now; for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteouſneſs. Then he ſuffered him.

16. [b] And Jeſus when he was baptized went up ſtraight way out of the water: and lo the heavens were open'd unto him, and he ſaw the Spirit of God deſcending * in a bodily ſhape * like a Dove
Luke iii. 22. Mat. iii. 17. and lighting upon him. And lo a voice from heaven, ſaying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleaſed.

[b] Mar. i. 10. 11. Luk. iii. 21, 22.

Luke iii. 23. * And Jeſus himſelf begun to be about thirty years of age.

(n) Wages, otherwiſe Pay.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

SECT. XVII.

Christ tempted in the Wilderness. Wilderness.

[c] Mat. iv. 1. Mar. i. 12. [c] AND Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, 1. Luk. iv.

[d] Luke iv. 2, 3, 4. 9, 10, 11, 12, 5. * [d] and he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan, * and when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterwards an hungred. 13. Mar. i. 2. Mat. iv. 2. 3.

And when the tempter came to him, he said, *if thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.* But he answered and said, *it is written* [Deut. viii. 3.] *Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.* 9. 4. Mat. iv.

Then the devil * bringeth him to Jerusalem, the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him, *If thou be the son of God cast thy self down: for it is written* [Psal. xci. 2.] *He shall give his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.* 5. 10. 9. Luk. iv. 5. Mat. iv. 21,

Jesus said unto him, *It is written again* [Deut. vi. 6.] *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.* 7.

Again the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the Kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them * in a moment of time, 8. 5, 6. Luke iv.

[e] Mat. iv. 9, 10, 11. and the devil said unto him, [e] *All this power*

Wilderneſs. *power will I give thee, and the glory of them, for that is delivered unto me, and to whomſoever I will, I give it, If thou* Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

Mat. iv. 7. 9. *therefore wilt * fall down and worſhip*

Luke iv. 7. *me * all ſhall be thine.*

8. And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, *get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written,* [Deut. x. 20.] *Thou ſhalt worſhip the Lord thy God, and him only ſhalt*

Luke iv. 13. *thou ſerve.* And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from

Mar. i. 13. him for a ſeaſon. And [*Jeſus*] was with the wild beaſts, and behold Angels

Mat. iv. 11. came and miniſtred unto him.

SECT. XVIII.

Jeſus the Word, and John's Teſtimony of him.

John i. 1. IN the beginning was the word, and the word was with God, and the
2. Word was God. The ſame was in the
3. beginning with God; all things were made by him, and without him was not any
4. thing made, that was made. In him was life, and the life was the light of
5. men. And the light ſhineth in darkneſs, and the darkneſs comprehended it not.
6. There was a man ſent from God whoſe
7. name was John. The ſame came for a witneſs, to bear witneſs of the Light, that
8. all men through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was ſent to
9. bear witneſs of that Light. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. And the word was made flesh, and dwelt amongst us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth. John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake; He that cometh after me, is preferred before me; for he was before me. And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace. For the Law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*. And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent Priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, *who art thou?* * And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not; * He confessed and denied not: but confessed *I am not the Christ*. And they asked him *what then? Art thou Elias?* And he saith, *I am not*. *Art thou that Prophet?* and he answered, *no*. Then said they unto him, *who art thou? that we may*

Wilderness. John i. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 15. Luk. iii. 20. John i. 21. 22.

give

John i. 23. *give an anſwer to them that ſent us:* Anno
what ſayeſt thou of thy ſelf? He ſaid, *I* Ætat. 30.
am the voice of one crying in the wilder- Miniſt. 1.
neſs, make ſtraight the way of the Lord,
24. as ſaid the Prophet Eſaias [xi. 3.] And
they which were ſent, were of the Pha-
25. riſees. And they asked him, and ſaid un-
to him, *why baptizeſt thou then, if thou*
be not that Chriſt, nor Elias, neither
Luke iii. 16. *that Prophet?* * [a] John anſwered, ſaying [a] Mat. iii.
Mat. iii. 11. unto them all, *I indeed baptize you with* 11.
John i. 26. *water* * *unto repentance,* * *but there* Mar. i. 8.
ſtandeth one among you whom ye know John i. 26.
27. *not* [b] *He it is who coming after me is pre-* [b] Mat. iii.
Mat. iii. 11. *ferred before me,* * [and] *is mightier* 11.
Mar. i. 7. *than I,* * *the latchet of whoſe ſhoes I am* Mar. i. 7.
not worthy to ſtoop down and unlooſe: Luke iii. 16.
Luk. iii. 16. * *he ſhall baptize you with the Holy*
17. *Ghoſt and with fire,* [c] *whoſe fan is in his* [c] Mat. iii.
hand, and he will throughly purge his 12.
floor, and will gather the wheat into his
garner; but the chaff he will burn with
18. *fire unquenchable.* And many other
things in *his* exhortation preached he un-
to the people.

Bethabara. * Theſe things were done in Bethabara
John i. 28. beyond Jordan, where John was bapti-
zing.

29. * The next day John ſeeth Jeſus coming
unto him, and ſaith, *Behold the Lamb of*
God, which taketh away the ſin of the
30. *world. This is he of whom I ſaid, af-*
ter me cometh a man, which is preferred
31. *before me: for he was before me. And I*
knew him not: but that he ſhould be
made manifeſt to Iſrael, therefore am I

come

Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

come baptizing with water. And John bare record, ſaying, *I ſaw the ſpirit deſcending from heaven like a dove, and it abode with him. And I knew him not:* but *he that ſent me to baptize with water the ſame ſaid unto me, upon whom thou ſhalt ſee the ſpirit deſcending and remaining on him, the ſame is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghoſt. And I ſaw, and bare record that this is the ſon of God.*

John i. 32. 33. 34.

Again the next day after, John ſtood and two of his Diſciples: and looking upon Jeſus as he walked, he ſaith *behold the Lamb of God.*

35. 36.

SECT. XIX.

Jeſus firſt known to Andrew and Peter.

THE two diſciples that heard [*John*] ſpeak followed Jeſus. Then Jeſus turned and ſaw them following, and ſaith unto them, *what ſeek ye?* They ſaid unto him, *Rabbi*, (which is to ſay, being interpreted, Maſter) *where dwelleſt thou?* He ſaith unto them, *come and ſee.* They came and ſaw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the (a) tenth hour.

37. 48. 39.

One of the two which heard John *ſpeak*, and followed him, was Andrew Simon Peter's brother. He firſt findeth his own brother Simon, and ſaith unto him, *we have found the Meſſiah*, which

40. 41.

(a) *Tenth hour* that is about four in the afternoon.

is

Galilee. is being interpreted the Chriſt. And he Anno
John i. 42. brought him to Jeſus, and when Jeſus be- Ætat. 30.
held him, he ſaid, *Thou art Simon the* Miniſt. 1.
ſon of Jona: thou ſhall be called Cephas,
which is by interpretation a ſtone.

SECT. XX.

Jeſus calls Philip, &c.

43. THE day following Jeſus would go
forth into Galilee, and findeth Phi-
44. lip, and ſaith unto him *follow me*. Now
Philip was of Bethſaida the city of An-
45. drew and Peter. Philip findeth Natha-
nael, and ſaith unto him *we have found*
him of whom Moſes in the Law, and the
Prophets did write, Jeſus of Nazareth
46. *the ſon of Joſeph*. And Nathanael ſaid
unto him, *Can there any good thing come*
out of Nazareth? Philip ſaith unto him,
come and ſee.
47. Jeſus ſaw Nathanael coming to him,
and ſaith of him, *Behold an Iſraelite in-*
48. *deed, in whom is no guile*. Nathanael
ſaith unto him, *whence knoweſt thou me?*
Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, *Be-*
fore that Philip called thee when thou
49. *waſt under the fig tree, I ſaw thee*, Na-
thanael anſwered and ſaith unto him,
Rabbi thou art the Son of God, thou art
50. *the King of Iſrael*. Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid unto him, *Becauſe I ſaid unto thee,*
I ſaw thee under the fig tree, believeſt
thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things than
51. *theſe*. And he ſaith unto him, *verily,*
verily,

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

verily, I say unto you, hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the Angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of Man. Galilee. John i.

SECT. XXI.

Miracle of the water turn'd into Wine. Cana.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there, and both Jesus was called and his disciples to the marriage. And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, *They have no Wine.* Jesus saith unto her, *Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.* His mother saith unto the servants, *whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.* And there were set there six water pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews containing two or three firkins a piece. Jesus saith unto them, *Fill the water pots with water.* And they filled them up to the brim, and he saith unto them, *Draw out now, and bear unto the Governour of the feast*, and they bear *it*. When the Ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feast called the bridegroom, and saith unto him. *Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have*

1. John ii. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. Miracle 1. 8. 9. 10.

well

Cana. ii. John

well drunk, then that which is worſe: but thou haſt kept the good wine until now. Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

11. This beginning of miracles did Jeſus in Cana of Galilee, and manifeſted forth his Glory; and his diſciples believed on him.

Capernaum.

12. After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his Mother, and his brethren and his diſciples; and they continued there not many days.

SECT. VI.

The firſt Paſſover after Chriſt's baptiſm. He drives the Traders out of the Temple.

13. AND the Jews paſſover was at hand, and Jeſus went up to Jeru-
14. ſalem. And found in the temple thoſe

Temple.

that ſold oxen, and ſheep, and doves,
15. and the changers of money, ſitting. And when he had made a ſcourge of ſmall cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the ſheep and the oxen; and poured out the changers money, and o-
16. verthrew the Tables; And ſaid unto them that ſold doves, *Take theſe things hence; make not my Father's houſe an*
17. *houſe of merchandiſe.* And his diſciples remembred that it was written [*Pſal.* lxix. 9.] *The zeal of thine houſe hath eaten me up.*
18. Then anſwered the Jews and ſaid unto him, *what ſign ſheweſt thou unto us, ſeeing*

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

seeing that thou dost these things? Jerusalem. John ii.
Jesus answered and said unto them, 19.
Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, 20.
Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of 21.
his body. When therefore he was risen 22.
from the dead, his disciples remembred
that he had said this unto them: and
they believed the scripture, and the
word which Jesus had said. Now when 23.
he was in Jerusalem at the Passover, in
the feast *day*, many believed in his name,
when they saw the miracles which he
did. But Jesus did not commit himself 24.
unto them, because he knew all men,
and needed not that any should testifie 25.
of man, for he knew what was in man.

SECT. XXIII.

Christ's conference with Nicodemus.

THERE was a man of the Pharisees, 1. John iii.
named Nicodemus, a ruler of the
Jews: the same came to Jesus by night 2.
and said unto him *Rabbi, we know that thou art a Teacher come from God, for no man can do these miracles that thou dost except God be with him.* Jesus an- 3.
swered and said unto him, *verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.*
Nicodemus saith unto him, *How can a* 4.
man be born when he is old? can he en-

Jeruſalem. *ter the ſecond time, into his mother's* Anno
John. iii. 5. *womb, and be born?* Jeſus anſwered, Ætat. 30.
" verily, verily, I ſay unto thee, except Miniſt. 1.
" a man be born of water and of the ſpi-
" rit, he cannot enter into the kingdom
6. " of God. That which is born of the
" fleſh, is fleſh; and that which is born
7. " of the ſpirit, is ſpirit. Marvel not
" that I ſaid unto thee, ye muſt be born
8. " again. The wind bloweth where it
" liſteth, and thou heareſt the ſound
" thereof, but canſt not tell whence it
" cometh, and whither it goeth: ſo is
" every one that is born of the ſpirit.
9. Nicodemus anſwered and ſaid unto him,
10. *How can theſe things be?* Jeſus anſwe-
red and ſaid unto him, " Art thou a Ma-
" ſter of Iſrael, and knoweſt not theſe
11. " things? verily, verily, I ſay unto
" thee, we ſpeak that we do know,
" and teſtifie that we have ſeen; and ye
12. " receive not our witneſs. If I have told
" you earthly things and ye believe not,
" how ſhall ye believe if I tell you of
13. " heavenly things? And no man hath
" aſcended up to heaven but he that
" came down from heaven, *even* the ſon
14. " of man which is in heaven. And as
" Moſes lifted up the ſerpent in the
" wilderneſs, even ſo muſt the ſon of
15. " man be lifted up: That whoſoever be-
" lieveth in him, ſhould not periſh, but
16. " have eternal Life. For God ſo loved
" the world, that he gave his only be-
" gotten Son, that whoſoever believeth
" in him, ſhould not periſh but have
" ever-

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

" everlasting Life. For God sent not Jerusalem.
" his son into the world to condemn the John iii.
" world; but that the world through 17.
" him might be saved. He that believ- 18.
" eth on him, is not condemned: but he
" that believeth not, is condemned al-
" ready, because he hath not believed in
" the name of the only begotten son of
" God. And this is the condemnation, 19.
" that light is come into the world,
" and men loved darkness rather than
" light, because their deeds were evil.
" For every one that doth evil hateth 20.
" the light; neither cometh to the
" light, lest his deeds should be repro-
" ved. But he that doth truth cometh 21.
" to the light, that his deeds may be
" made manifest, that they are wrought
" in God.

SECT. XXIV.

Jesus departs from Jerusalem with his disciples and baptizeth. Judea.

AFTER these things came Jesus 22.
and his disciples into the land of Ju-
dea, and there he tarried with them, and
baptized.

Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

SECT. XXV.

Enon. *John the Baptiſt continues to baptize in Enon, gives a Teſtimony concerning Chriſt.*

John iii. 23. AND John alſo was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim, becauſe there was much water there: and they came,
24. and were baptized. For John was not yet caſt into priſon.
25. Then there aroſe a queſtion between *ſome* of John's diſciples, and the Jews
26. about purifying. And they came unto John and ſaid unto him, *Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou bareſt witneſs, behold the ſame bap-*
27. *tizeth, and all men come to him.* John anſwered and ſaid, " a man can receive
" nothing, except it be given him from
28. " heaven; ye your ſelves bear me witneſs,
" that I ſaid I am not the Chriſt, but
29. " that I am ſent before him. He that
" hath the bride is the bridegroom: but
" the friend of the bridegroom, which
" ſtandeth, and heareth him, rejoyceth
" greatly becauſe of the bridegroom's
" voice: this my joy therefore is fulfil-
30. " led. He muſt increaſe, but I *muſt*
31. " decreaſe. He that cometh from above,
" is above all: he that is of the earth, is
" earthly, and ſpeaketh of the earth: he
" that cometh from heaven, is above all.
" And what he hath ſeen and heard,
32. " that he teſtifieth, and no man recei-

veth

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

" veth his testimony. He that hath re- Enon.
" ceived his testimony, hath set to his 33. John iii.
" seal that God is true. For he whom 34.
" God hath sent, speaketh the words of
" God: for God giveth not the spirit by
" measure *unto him.*
" The Father loveth the son, and hath 35.
" given all things into his hand. He 36.
" that believeth on the son, hath ever-
" lasting life, and he that believeth not
" the son, shall not see Life; but the
" wrath of God abideth on him.

SECT. XXVI.

John put in Prison by Herod.

a Mat. xiv. 3. Mar. vi. 17.

a BUT Herod the Tetrarch added yet 19. Luk. iii.
this above all, that he shut up John 20.
in prison, being reproved by him for He- 19.
rodias his brother Philip's wife, * for he 17. Mar. vi.
had married her, * and for all the evils 19. Luke iii.
which Herod had done. * For John had 18. Mar. vi.
said unto Herod, *It is not lawful for*
thee to have thy Brother's wife, There- 19.
fore Herodias had a quarrel against him,
and would have killed him, but she
could not. For Herod feared John, know- 20.
ing that he was a just man and an holy,
and observed him; and when he heard
him, he did many things and heard
him gladly. * And when he would 5. Mat. xiv.
have put him to death, he feared the
multitude, because they counted him as
a prophet.

Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

SECT. XXVII.

Diſcourſes of Jeſus with the Samaritan woman.

John iv. 1. WHEN therefore the Lord knew, how the Pharisees had heard that
Jeſus made and baptized more diſciples
2. than John, (though Jeſus himſelf bapti-
Mat. iv. 12. zed not, but his diſciples) * Now when
Jeſus heard [*alſo*] that John was caſt into
John iv. 3. Priſon. * He left Judea, [a] and departed a- [a] Mat. iv.
4. gain into Galilee, and he muſt needs go 12.
5. through Samaria. Then cometh he to a
Sychar. City of Samaria, which is called Sychar,
near to the parcel of ground that Jacob
6. gave to his ſon Joſeph. Now Jacob's
well was there, Jeſus therefore being
wearied with *his* Journey, ſat thus on
the well, and it was about the ſixth
hour.
7. There cometh a woman of Samaria
to draw water: Jeſus ſaith unto her,
8. *Give me to drink.* (For his diſciples
were gone away unto the City to buy
9. meat) Then ſaith the woman of Sama-
ria unto him, *How is that thou being a Jew askeſt drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria?* (for the Jews have no
10. dealings with the (a) Samaritans.) Jeſus

(a) *Samaritans* were a people that after the carrying away of the ten Tribes into Captivity inhabited that Country, betwixt whom and the Jews there was great enmity.

anſwered

Anno Ætat. 30. Ætat. 1.

answered and said unto her, *if thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, give me to drink, thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.* The woman saith unto him, *Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children and his cattel?* Jesus answered and said unto her, *Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again, But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up unto everlasting Life.* The woman saith unto him, *Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.* Jesus saith unto her, Go *call thy Husband, and come hither.* The woman answered and said, *I have no Husband.* Jesus said unto her, *Thou hast well said, I have no husband: For thou hast had five husbands, and him whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.* The woman saith unto him, *Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain, and ye say that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.* Jesus saith unto her, " woman believe me, the " hour cometh when ye shall neither in " this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem " worship

Sychar. John iv. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21.

Sycar. " worſhip the Father. Ye worſhip ye Anno
John iv. 22. " know not what: we know what Ætat. 30.
" we worſhip: for Salvation is of the Miniſt. 1.
23. " Jews. But the hour cometh, and now
" is, when the true worſhippers ſhall
" worſhip the Father in ſpirit and in
" truth: for the Father ſeeketh ſuch to
24. " worſhip him. God is a ſpirit and
" they that worſhip him, muſt worſhip
" *him* in ſpirit and in truth.

25. The woman ſaith unto him, *I know that Meſſias cometh, which is called Chriſt, when he is come he will tell us all things.*

26. Jeſus ſaith unto her, *I that ſpeak unto thee am he.*

27. And upon this came his diſciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man ſaid, *What ſeekeſt thou?* or *why talkeſt thou with her?*

28. The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the City, and
29. ſaith to the men, *Come ſee a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Chriſt?*

30. Then they went out of the City, and came unto him.

31. In the mean while his diſciples prayed
32. him, ſaying, *Maſter, eat.* But he ſaid unto them, *I have meat to eat that ye*
33. *know not of.* Therefore ſaid the diſciples one to another, *Hath any man*
34. *brought him ought to eat?* Jeſus ſaith unto them, " My meat is to do the will
" of him that ſent me, and to finiſh his
35. " work: ſay not ye there are yet four
" months, and then cometh harveſt? be-
" hold

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

" hold I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, Sychar.
" and look on the fields; for they are John iv.
" white already to harvest. And he that 36.
" reapeth receiveth wages, and ga-
" thereth fruit unto life eternal, that both
" he that soweth, and he that reapeth
" may rejoice together. And herein is 37.
" that saying true, one soweth and ano-
" ther reapeth, I sent you to reap that 38.
" whereon ye bestowed no labour, other
" men laboured and ye entered into their
" labours.

And many of the Samaritans of that 39.
City believed on him for the saying of
the woman which testified, *He told me all that ever I did.*

So when the Samaritans were come 40.
unto him, they besought him that he
would tarry with them, and he abode 41.
there two days: and many more belie-
ved, because of his own word; and said 42.
unto the woman, *Now we believe, not because of thy saying, for we have heard him our selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.*

Now after two days he departed thence 43. Galilee.
and went into Galilee.

SECT. XXVIII.

Jesus goes into Galilee, preaches there, and at Nazareth, where he is ill received.

AND Jesus returned in the power of 14. Luke iv.
the spirit into Galilee: and there

went

Galilee. out a fame of him through all the region round about. Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

Luke iv.

Mar. i. 14. * Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdom of God,

15. and saying, *The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the Gospel.* * And he taught in their Synagogues, being glorified of all.

Luke iv.

Nazareth. 16. And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up; and as his custom was, he went into the Synagogue on the

17. Sabbath day, and stood up to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the Prophet Esaias; and when he had opened the book, he found the place

18. where it was written [Isai. lxi. 1.] *The spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor: he hath sent me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that*

19. *are bruised. To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.*

And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the Synagogue were fastened on him.

20. And he began to say unto them, *This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.*

21. And all bare him witness and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said,

is

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1. *is not this Joseph's son?* And he said unto them: "Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician heal thy self: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. [a] *And he said,* verily I say unto you, no prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land: But unto none of them was Elias sent save unto Sarepta, *a city* of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet: and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

Nazareth. Luke iv. [a] John iv. 44. 24. 25. 26. 27.

And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, and rose up and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might cast him down headlong. But he passing through the mids of them went his way. 28. 29. 30.

SECT. XXIX.

Jesus cures the Son of a noble man of Capernaum.

Galilee.

THEN when [*Jesus*] was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, 45. John iv.

Galilee. John iv. him, having ſeen all the things that he did at Jeruſalem at the feaſt: for they alſo went unto the feaſt. So Jeſus came a- gain into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine; and there was a certain noble man whoſe ſon was ſick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jeſus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and beſought him that he would come down, and heal his ſon, for he was at the point of death. Then ſaid Jeſus unto him, *Except ye ſee ſigns and wonders, ye will not believe.* The noble man ſaith unto him, *Sir, come down e'er my child dye.* Jeſus ſaith unto him, *go thy way, thy ſon liveth.* And the man believed the word that Jeſus had ſpoken unto him, and he went his way. And as he was now going down, his ſervants met him, and told *him* ſaying, *thy ſon liveth.* Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend: and they ſaid unto him, *yeſterday at the ſeventh hour the fever left him.* So the father knew that *it was* at the ſame hour, in which Jeſus ſaid unto him, *Thy ſon liveth*; and himſelf believed and his whole houſe.

Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

Cana.

Miracle 2.

This is again the ſecond miracle that Jeſus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

SECT. XXX.

Jesus goes to Capernaum and preaches there, cures a man that had an unclean spirit. Capernaum.

AND [*Jesus*] leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon, and Nephtalim: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet [ix. 1, 2.] saying, *The Land of Zabulon and the Land of Nephtalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: The people which sat in darkness, saw great light, and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.* 13. Mat. iv. 14. 15. 16.

[a] Mar. i. 21. [b] Luke iv. 31, 32. [a] And [*Jesus*] came down to Capernaum a city of Galilee, * [b] on the sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at his Doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, * for his word was with power *and not as the scribes. 31. Luke iv. 21. Mar. i. 22. 32. Luke iv. 22. Mar. i.

* From that time Jesus began to preach and to say, *Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.* 17. Mat. iv.

[a] Mar. i. 23, 24, 25. [a] And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cryed out with a loud voice saying, *let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art* 33. Luke iv. 34.

Capernaum. Luke iv. *art thou come to deſtroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.* Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

Miracle 3. 35. And Jeſus rebuked him ſaying, *hold thy*
Mark i. 26. *peace and come out of him.* * And when
Luke iv. 35. the unclean ſpirit had [a] thrown him [a] Luke iv.
Mark i. 26. in the midſt, * torn him, and cryed with 35.
Luke iv. 35. a loud voice, he came out of him * and
Mark i. 27. hurt him not. * [b] And they were all a- [b] Luke iv.
mazed, inſomuch that they queſtioned 36.
among themſelves, ſaying *what thing is*
Luke iv. 36. *this? what new doctrine is this?* * [c] *for* [c] Mar. i. 27.
with authority and power he command-
eth the unclean ſpirits, and they come
Mark i. 27. *out*, * *and they do obey him.* [d] And [d] Luk. iv.
28. immediately his fame ſpread abroad
throughout all the region round about
Galilee.

SECT. XXXI.

Jeſus cures Simon Peter's Mother-in-law of a fever.

29. [e] AND forthwith when they were [e] Mat. viii.
come out of the Synagogue they 14.
Mat. viii. 14. } entred into the houſe of Simon * Peter Luk. iv. 30.
Mar. i. 29. } * and Andrew, with James and John.
Luke iv. 33. * [f] And Simon's wives mother was [f] Mat. viii.
39. taken with a great fever, and they be- 14.
ſought him for her; and he ſtood over Mar. i. 30.
Mar. i. 31. her and rebuked the fever, * [g] and he [g] Mat. viii.
came and took her by the hand and lift 15, 16.
Miracle 4. her up; and immediately the fever left Luk. iv. 39,
her, and ſhe miniſtred unto them. 40.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

SECT. XXXII.

Several sick and possessed with devils cured by Christ. Capernaum.

AND at even when the sun did set, 32. Mar. i.
they brought unto him all that were
diseased, and them that were possessed
with devils; and all the city was gathe- 33.
red together at the door. And he healed Miracle. 5.
many that were sick of divers diseases; 34.
[a] Mar. i. 34. * [a] and he cast out the spirits with *his* 16. Mat. iii.
Luke iv. 41. word, * crying out and saying *thou art* 41. Luke iv.
Christ the Son of God, and he rebuking
them suffered them not to speak: for
they knew that he was Christ, * and 16. Mat. viii.
healed all that were sick, that it might be 17.
fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the
prophet [liii. 4.] saying *Himself took our infirmities and bare our sicknesses.*

SECT. XXXIII.

Jesus retired into a Desert, where he is followed by many.

[b] Luke iv. 42. [b] AND in the morning rising up a 35. Mar. i.
great while before day, he went
out and departed into a solitary place
and there prayed. And Simon and they 36.
that were with him followed after him;
* and the people sought him and came 42. Luke iv.
unto him, and when thy had found him 37. Mar. i.
they said unto him, *all men seek for thee*;
* and stayed him that he should not de- 42. Luke iv.

part

Deſert. Luke iv. 43. part from them. [a] And he ſaid unto them, *I muſt preach the kingdom of God to other cities alſo, for therefore am I ſent.* Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1. [a] Mar. i. 38.

SECT. XXXIV.

Lake of Gennezareth. *Jeſus goeth into a ſhip to preach to the people, a great draught of fiſhes, he calleth Andrew and Peter.*

Luke v. 1. AND it came to paſs, that as the people preſſed upon him to hear the word of God he ſtood by the (a) lake
Mar. i. 16. of Gennezareth. [b] * Now as he walked [b] Mat. iv. 18.
Mat. iv. 18. by the ſea of Galilee, * [c] he ſaw two bre- [c] Mar. i. 16.
thren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, caſting a net into the ſea (for
Luke v. 2. they were fiſhers) * And ſaw two ſhips ſtanding by the lake: but the fiſher-
men were gone out of them, and were
3. waſhing *their* nets: And he entred into one of the ſhips, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thruſt out a little from the land: and he ſat down and taught the people out of the ſhip.
4. Now when he had left ſpeaking, he ſaid unto Simon, *Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a*
5. *draught.* And Simon anſwering, ſaid

(a) *Lake of Gennezareth* and the ſea of Galilee were the ſame thing, and called alſo the ſea of Tiberias.

unto

Anno Ætat. 30. Minist. 1.

unto him, *Master we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.* And when they had done this, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake. And they beckoned unto *their* partners which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships so, that they began to sink. When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus knees, saying, *Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord.* For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken, [a] and Jesus said unto them, *fear not, come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.* And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

Genezareth. Luke v.

6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 17. Mar. i.

[a] Mat. iv. 19, 20. Luke v. 10.

11.

SECT. XXXV.

Jesus calleth John and James the sons of Zebedee.

[b] AND going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them, and they immediately left [c] their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

[b] Mar. i. 19, 20. Luke v. 10.

21. Mat. iv.

Mar. i. 20.

[c] Mat. iv. 22. Luke v. 11.

22.

Galilee.

Anno Ætat. 30. Miniſt. 1.

SECT. XXXVI.

Jeſus goes and teaches about all Galilee and heals the ſick.

iv. Mat. 23. AND Jeſus went about all Galilee teaching in their (a) Synagogues, and preaching the Goſpel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of ſickneſs, and all manner of diſeaſe among the
24. people. And his fame went throughout all (b) Syria: and they brought unto him all ſick people that were taken with divers diſeaſes, and torments, and thoſe
Miracle. which were poſſeſſed with devils, and thoſe which were lunatick, and thoſe that had the Palſie; and he healed them.
25. And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and *from* (c) Decapolis, and *from* Jeruſalem, and *from* Judea, and *from* beyond Jordan.

The end of the firſt year of Chriſt's Miniſtry.

(a) *Synagogue* was a place where the Jews aſſembled on the Sabbath-day, to hear the Law and the Prophets read and explain'd.

(b) *Syria* a Country confining on Paleſtine on the north, and part of the eaſt.

(c) *Decapolis*, a part of the Land of Canaan lying on both ſides the River Jordan at its coming out of the Sea of Galilee.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

Galilee.

SECT. XXXVII.

Jesus cleanseth the Leper.

[a] Mat. viii. 2. Mar. i. 40. AND it came to pass when he was in a certain City, [a] behold a man full of Leprosie: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, *Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.* * And Jesus moved with compas- [b] Mat viii. 3. sion, [b] put forth *his* hand and touched him, and saith unto him, *I will, be thou* Luke v. 13. *clean.* And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the Leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed. And he straightly charged him, and forthwith [c] Mat. viii. 4. sent him away; [c] and saith unto him, Luke v. 14. *See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thy self to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded for a Testimony unto them.* But he went out and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter: * But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, [d] Mar. i. 45. [d] and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities * insomuch that Jesus could no [e] Mar. i. 45. more openly enter into the city, * [e] and he withdrew himself into the Wilderness and prayed.

12. Luke v.

41. Mar. i.

42. Miracle.

43.

44.

45.

15. Luke v.

45. Mar. i.

16. Luk. v.

Capernaum.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

SECT. XXXVIII.

Christ cureth a man sick of the Palsie.

Mat. i. 9. AND [*Jesus*] entred into a Ship, and passed over and came into his own city.

Mar. i. 2. * And again he entred into Capernaum after *some* days, and it was noised
Luk. xvii. 5. that he was in the house. * And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and Doctors of the Law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was *present* to heal them.
Mar. ii. 2. And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no not so much as about the door: and he preached the
Mat. ix. 2. word unto them * [a] and behold they brought to him a man sick of the Pal-
Mar. ii. 3. sie, lying on a bed * which was born of
Luk. v. 18. four * and they sought means to bring
19. him in and to lay him before him. [b] And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house top, and let him down through the tiling with
Mar. ii. 5. his couch into the midst before Jesus. * When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto
Miracle. the sick of the Palsie, *Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.*
6. But there were certain Scribes sitting there and reasoning in their hearts.

[a] Mar. ii. 3. Luk. v. 18.

[b] Mat. ix. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. Luk. v. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26.

Why

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? And immediately when Jesus perceived in his Spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, * *Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?* * *Why reason ye these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the Palsie, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, arise, and take up thy bed and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins:* (he saith to the sick of the Palsie) *I say unto thee arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.*

And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all * glorifying God, * insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorifyed God * which had given such power unto men, * saying *we never saw it on this fashion;* * and were filled with fear, saying *we have seen strange things to day.*

Capernaum.

7. Mar. ii.
8.
4. Mat. ix.
8. Mar. ii.
9.
10.
11.
12.
25. Luk. v.
12. Mar. ii.
8. Mat. ix.
12. Mar. ii.
26. Luke v.

SECT. XXXIX.

The calling of Matthew.

Sea of Galilee.

AND [*Jesus*] went forth again by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

[a] Luk. v. 27. * [a] And as Jesus passed forth from thence,
[b] Mat. ix. 9. * [b] he saw Levi, * named Matthew, * *the*
Luk. v. 27. *son* of Alpheus, sitting at the receipt of custom,

13. Mar. ii.
9. Mat. iv.
14 Mar. ii.
9. Mat. ix.
14. Mar. ii.

Sea of Galilee. Cuſtom, and ſaid unto him, follow me; Anno. Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.
Luk. v. 28. * [c] and he left all and followed him.

[c] Mat. ix. 9.

SECT. XL.

Matthew makes a feaſt for Chriſt, who eats with Publicans and Sinners.

29. [a] AND Levi made [*Jeſus*] a great feaſt in his own houſe: and there was a great company of publicans * and

Mat. ix. 10. ſinners came [b] and ſat down with him

Mar. ii. 15. and his diſciples: * for there were many and they followed him.

Luk. v. 30. / Mar. ii. 16. * [c] But the Scribes and Phariſees * [*ſeeing*] him eat with publicans and ſinners

Luk. v. 30. * murmured againſt his diſciples ſaying,

Mar. ii. 16. 17. * [d] *How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicans and Sinners?* When Jeſus heard *it*, he ſaith unto them, *They that are whole have no need of a Phiſitian, but they that are ſick. I came not to call the righteous but ſinners to repentance.* * *But go ye and learn what*

Mat. ix. 13. *that meaneth, I will have mercy and not ſacrifice.* [Hoſea vi. 6.]

Mar. ii. 18. * And the Diſciples of John, and of the Phariſees uſed to faſt, [e] and they come and ſay unto him, *Why do the diſciples of John and of the Phariſees faſt*

Mat. ix. 14. / Luk. v. 33. / Mar. ii. 18. * *oft* * *and make prayers* * *but thy diſciples faſt not?*

19. And Jeſus ſaid unto them, *Can the children of the Bridechamber faſt, while the Bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the Bridegroom with them they*

[a] Mat. ix. 10. / Mar. ii. 15. / [b] Luk. v. 29. / [c] Mat. ix. 11. / Mar. ii. 16. / [d] Mat. ix 11, 12, 13. / Luk. v. 30. 31. 32. / [e] Mat. ix. 14, 15. / Luk. v. 33, 34, 35.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the Bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

* And he spake also a parable unto them, [a] No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new agrees not with the old, * and the rent is made worse: * and no man putteth new wine into old (a) bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, the old is better.

Sea of Galilee 20. Mar. ii.

[a] Mat. ix. 16, 17. Mar. ii. 21, 22.

36. Luk. v.

21. Mar. ii.

37. Luk. v.

38.

39.

SECT. XLI.

The second Passover after Christ's Baptism.

The Paralytic cur'd at the pool of Jerusalem. *Bethesda.*

AFTER this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep *market* a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethes-

1. Joh. v.

2.

(a) *Bottles.* Their bottles that they kept their wine in, were made of Skins.

Jeruſalem. da, having five porches. In theſe lay Anno
Joh. v. 2. a great multitude of impotent folk, of Ætat. 31.
3. blind, halt, withered, waiting for the Miniſt. 2.
4. moving of the water. For an Angel
went down at a certain ſeaſon into the
pool, and troubled the water: whoſoever
then firſt after the troubling of the wa-
ter ſtepped in, was made whole of what-
5. ſoever diſeaſe he had. And a certain
man was there, which had an infirmity
6. thirty and eight years. When Jeſus ſaw
him lie, and knew that he had been now
a long time *in that caſe*, he ſaith unto
7. him, *wilt thou be made whole?* The
impotent man anſwered him, *Sir, I have
no man, when the water is troubled, to
put me into the pool; but while I am co-
ming, another ſteppeth down before me.*
8. Jeſus ſaith unto him, *riſe, take up thy*
Miracle. 9. *bed and walk.* And immediately the
man was made whole; and took up his
bed and walked: and on the ſame day
was the Sabbath. The Jews therefore
10. ſaid unto him that was cured, *it is the
Sabbath-day, it is not lawful for thee to*
11. *carry thy bed*; he anſwered them, *he that
made me whole, the ſame ſaid unto me,*
12. *take up thy bed and walk.* Then asked
they him, *what man is that which ſaid*
13. *unto thee, take up thy bed and walk?* And
he that was healed wiſt not who it was:
for Jeſus had conveyed himſelf away, a
14. multitude being in that place. Afterwards
Jeſus findeth him in the temple, and ſaid
unto him, *Behold thou art made whole, ſin
no more leſt a worſe thing come unto thee.*

The

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

The man departed and told the Jews Jeruſalem.
that it was Jeſus which had made him 15. John iv.
whole. And therefore did the Jews per- 16.
ſecute Jeſus, and ſought to ſlay him,
becauſe he had done this thing on the
ſabbath day. But Jeſus anſwered them. 17.
My Father worketh hitherto and I work, 18.
Therefore the Jews ſought the more to
kill him, becauſe he not only had broken
the ſabbath, but ſaid alſo *that God was
his Father, making himſelf equal with
God.* Then anſwered Jeſus, and ſaid 19.
unto them, " Verily, verily I ſay unto
" you, The Son can do nothing of him-
" ſelf, but what he ſeeth the Father do;
" for what things ſoever he doeth, theſe
" alſo doeth the Son likewiſe. For the 20.
" Father loveth the Son, and ſheweth
" him all things that himſelf doeth:
" and he will ſhew him greater works
" then theſe, that ye may marvel. For 21.
" as the Father raiſeth up the dead, and
" and quickneth them: even ſo the Son
" quickneth whom he will. For the Fa-
" ther judgeth no man; but hath com- 22.
" mitteth all judgment unto the Son:
" That all men ſhould honour the Son, 23.
" even as they honour the Father. He
" that honoureth not the Son, honou-
" reth not the Father which hath ſent
" him.

" Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, He 24.
" that heareth my word, and believeth
" on him that ſent me, hath everlaſting
" life, and ſhall not come into condem-
" nation, but is paſſed from death unto
" Life. " Verily,

Jeruſalem. Anno
John v. 25. "Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, The
"hour is coming and now is, when the Ætat. 31.
"dead ſhall hear the voice of the Son Miniſt. 2.
"of God, and they that hear ſhall live.
26. "For as the Father has life in him-
"ſelf, ſo hath he given to the Son
27. "to have life in himſelf: and hath
"given him authority to execute judg-
"ment alſo, becauſe he is the Son of
"man.
28. "Marvel not at this: for the hour is
"coming, in the which all that are in
29. "the graves ſhall hear his voice, and
"ſhall come forth, they that have done
"good unto the reſurrection of life;
"and they that have done evil, unto the
"reſurrection of damnation.
30. "I can of mine own ſelf do nothing:
"as I hear, I judge: and my judgment
"is juſt, becauſe I ſeek not mine own
"will, but the will of the Father which
31. "hath ſent me. If I bear witneſs of my
32. "ſelf, my witneſs is not true. There
"is another that beareth witneſs of me,
"and I know that the witneſs which he
33. "witneſſeth of me is true. Ye ſent
"unto John, and he bare witneſs unto
34. "the truth. But I receive not teſti-
"mony from man: but theſe things I
35. "ſay that ye might be ſaved. He was
"a burning and a ſhining light: and ye
"were willing for a ſeaſon to rejoice
36. "in his light. But I have greater wit-
"neſs than *that* of John: For the works
"which the Father has given me to fi-
"niſh, the ſame works that I do, bear

"witneſs

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" witness of me, that the Father has sent Jerusalem.
" me. And the Father himself which has 37. John v.
" sent me, hath born witness of me. Ye
" have neither heard his voice at any
" time, nor seen his shape. And ye 38.
" have not his word abiding in you: for
" whom he hath sent, him ye believe
" not. Search the scriptures, for in them 39.
" ye think ye have eternal life, and
" they are they which testifie of me.
" And ye will not come to me, that ye 40.
" might have life. I receive not honour 41.
" from men. But I know you, that ye 42.
" have not the Love of God in you.
" I am come in my Father's name, and 43.
" ye receive me not: if another shall
" come in his own name, him ye will
" receive. How can ye believe, which 44.
" receive honour one from another, and
" seek not the honour that *cometh* from
" God only? Do not think that I will 45.
" accuse you to the Father: there is one
" that accuseth you *even* Moses, in
" whom ye trust. For had ye believed 46.
" Moses, ye would have believed me:
" for he wrote of me. But if ye believe 47.
" not his writings, how shall ye believe
" my words.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

SECT. XLII.

The Phariſees reprove Chriſt's Diſciples for plucking the ears of Corn on the ſabbath.

Luke vi. 1. [a] AND it came to paſs on the ſecond ſabbath after the firſt, that [*Jeſus*] went through the corn fields, and his Diſciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

[a] Mat. xii. 1. Mar. ii. 23.

Mat. xii. 2. * [b] But when the Phariſees ſaw *it* they ſaid unto him, Behold thy diſciples do that which is not lawful upon the ſab-

[b] Mar. ii. 24. Luk. vi. 2.

Luk. vi. 3. bath day. * [c] And Jeſus anſwering them, ſaid "have ye not read ſo much as this, "what David did, when himſelf was an "hungred, and they which were with

[c] Mat. xii. 3. Mar. ii. 25.

Mar. ii. 26. "him? * [d] How he went into the houſe "of God in the days of Abiathar the

[d] Mat. xii. 4. Luk. vi. 4.

Luke vi. 4. "high prieſt, * [e] and did take and eat "the ſhew bread, and gave alſo to "them that were with him, which is "not lawful to eat, but for the prieſts

[e] Mat. xii. 4. Mar. ii. 26.

Mat. xii. 5. "alone? * Or have ye not read in the "Law, how that on the ſabbath days "the prieſts in the temple prophane

6. "the ſabbath, and are blameleſs? But "I ſay unto you, that in this place is

Mar. ii. 27. "*one* greater than the temple. * And he "ſaid unto them, The ſabbath was "made for man, and not man for the

Mat. xii. 7. "ſabbath. * But if ye had known what "this meaneth, [Hoſea vi. 6.] *I will have*

mercy

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2. [a] Mar. ii. 28. Luk. vi. 5.

mercy and not ſacrifice, " ye would " not have condemned the guiltleſs. " [a] For the ſon of man is Lord even of " the ſabbath. Mat. xii. 8.

SECT. XLIII.

Jeſus cureth a man that had a withered hand on the ſabbath day; at which the Jews being offended, take counſel againſt him.

[a] Mat. xii. 9, 10. Mar. iii. 1, 2, 3.

AND when [Jeſus] was departed thence * [a] it came to paſs alſo on another ſabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue and taught: and there was a man whoſe right hand was withered. And the Scribes and Phariſees watched him whether he would heal on the ſabbath day: that they might find an accuſation againſt him. But he knew their thoughts, and ſaid unto the man which had the withered hand, *Riſe up, and ſtand forth in the mids.* And he aroſe and ſtood forth. * And they asked him ſaying, *It is lawful to heal on the ſabbath days?* that they might accuſe him. " And he ſaid unto them, what man " ſhall there be among you, that ſhall have " one ſheep, and if it fall into a pit on " the ſabbath day, will he not lay hold " on it, and lift *it* out? How much " then is a man better than a ſheep? " wherefore it is lawful to do well on " the ſabbath days. 9. Mat. xii. 6. Luke vi. 7. 8. 10. Mat. xii. 11. 12.

* Then

Luk. vi. 9. * [a] Then ſaid Jeſus unto them I will ask you one thing, *Is it lawful on the ſabbath days to do good or to do evil? to* Mar. iii. 4. *ſave life or to deſtroy it?* * But they held their peace.

5. [b] And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardneſs of their hearts, [c] he ſaith unto the man, *ſtretch forth thine* Miracle. *hand.* And he ſtretched *it* out: and his hand was reſtored whole as the other.

6. And the Phariſees went forth with the Herodians, and ſtraightway took counſel againſt him, how they might Luk. vi. 11. deſtroy him. * And they were filled with madneſs and communed one with another what they might do to Jeſus.

Mat. xii. 15. * But when Jeſus knew *it*, he withdrew himſelf from thence.

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

[a] Mar. iii. 4.

[b] Luk. vi. 10.

[c] Mat. xii. 13, 14. Luk. vi. 13.

SECT. XLIV.

Galilee. *Jeſus withdraweth himſelf to the Sea, where a great multitude follow him, to hear him, and be healed.*

Mark iii. 7. BUT Jeſus withdrew himſelf with his diſciples to the ſea: [a] and a great multitude followed him from Ga- 8. lilee and from Judea. And from Jeruſalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan: and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude when they had heard what great things he did, came

[a] Mat. xii. 15.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

came unto him. And he spake to his 9. Mar. iii.
disciples, that a small ship should wait
on him, because of the multitude, lest
[a] Mat. xii. 15. they should throng him. [a] For he had 10.
healed many, insomuch that they pres-
sed upon him for to touch him, as ma-
ny as had plagues. And unclean spirits 11.
when they saw him, fell down before
him, and cried, saying, Thou art the
[b] Mat. xii. 16. son of God. [b] And he straightly char- 12.
ged them, that they should not make
him known. * That it might be fulfilled 17. Mat. xii.
which was spoken by Esaias the prophet
[xlii. i.] saying, *Behold my servant* 18.
*whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom
my soul is well pleased: I will put my
spirit upon him, and he shall shew judge-
ment to the Gentiles. He shall not* 19.
*strive, nor cry, neither shall any man
hear his voice in the streets. A brui-* 20.
*sed reed shall he not break, and smoak-
ing flax shall he not quench, till he
send forth Judgment unto Victory.
And in his name shall the Gentiles* 21.
trust.

SECT. XLV.

The chusing of the twelve Apostles. Galilee.

[c] Mar. iii. 13.

AND it came to pass in those days, 12. Luk. vi.
that [c] he went out into a moun-
tain to pray, and continued all night in
prayer to God. And when it was day 13.
he called unto him his disciples: * and 13. Mar. iii.
[d] Mar. iii. 14. they came unto him, * [d] and of them he 13. Luk. vi. } 14. Mar. iii. }
chose

Galilee. choſe twelve * that they ſhould be with Anno
Luk. vi. 13. him, * whom alſo he named Apoſtles: Ætat. 31.
Mar. iii. 14. * and that he might ſend them forth to Miniſt. 2.
15. preach: and to have power to heal ſick-
neſſes, and to caſt out devils.

Luke vi. 14. * [a] Simon (whom he alſo named Pe- [a] Mar. iii.
Mar. iii. 17. ter) and Andrew his brother, * [b] And 16. 11.
James the *ſon* of Zebedee, and John the [b] Luk. vi.
brother of James, and he ſirnamed them 14, 15.
Boanerges, which is the ſons of Thun-
18. der.) And Philip and Bartholomew,
and Matthew, and Thomas, and James
Luk. iv. 16. the *ſon* of Alpheus. * And Judas [*alſo*
Mar. iii. 18. } *called*] * Thaddeus, * *the brother* of
Luk. vi. 16. { James, [c] and Simon * the Cananite * called [c] Mar. iii.
Mar. iii. 18. } Zelotes * [d] and Judas Iſcariot, which 18.
Luk. vi. 15. } alſo betrayed him. [d] Luk. vi.
Mat. iii. 19. 16.

SECT. XLVI.

Jeſus goes into the plain with the Apoſtles, and his other Diſciples, and is followed by a multitude to be healed of their diſeaſes; his friends ſeek to lay hold of him.

Luke vi. 17. AND he came down with them, and ſtood in the plain, and the company of his diſciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jeruſalem, and from the ſea coaſt of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diſeaſes;

And

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all. Galilee. 18. Luk. vi. 19.

And they went into an house, and the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. 19. Mar. ii. 20.

And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said he is beside himself. 21.

SECT. XLVII.

Christ's sermon on the Mount.

AND seeing the multitudes he went up into a mountain: and when he was set his disciples came unto him, 1. Mat. v.

* and he lifted up his eyes on his disciples. * And he opened his mouth and taught them, saying, " [a] Blessed " are the poor in spirit, for theirs is " the Kingdom of heaven. Blessed *are* " they that mourn * now, * for they " shall be comforted. Blessed are the " meek, for they shall inherit the " Earth. Blessed *are* they which do " hunger * now * after righteousness, " for they shall be filled. Blessed *are* " the merciful: for they they shall obtain mercy. Blessed *are* the pure " in heart: for they shall see God. " Blessed *are* the peace makers: for " they shall be called the children of " God. Blessed *are* they which are

20. Luk. vi. 2. Mat. v. 3. 4. 21. Luk. vi. 4. Mat. v. 5. 6. 21. Luk. vi. 6. Mat. v. 7. 8. 9.

[a] Luk. vi. 20, 21.

Galilee. " perſecuted for righteouſneſs ſake, for Anno
Mat. v. " theirs is the Kingdom of heaven. Ætat. 31.
Miniſt. 2.
Luke vi. 22. " * [a] Bleſſed are ye when men ſhall hate [a] Mat. v. 11.
" you, and when they ſhall ſeparate
" you *from their company*, and ſhall
Mat. v. 11. " * [b] revile you and perſecute you, and [b] Luk. vi
" ſhall ſay all manner of evil againſt 22, 23.
12. " you falſely for my ſake. Rejoyce and
" be exceeding glad: for great is your
Luk. vi. 23. " reward in heaven: * [c] for in the like [c] Mat. v. 12.
" manner, did their fathers unto the
Mat. v. 12. " * prophets which were before you.
Luke vi. 24. " But woe unto you that are rich:
" for ye have received your conſolation.
25. " Woe unto you that are full: for ye
" ſhall hunger. Woe unto you that
" laugh now: for ye ſhall mourn and
26. " weep. Woe unto you when all men
" ſhall ſpeak well of you: for ſo did
" their fathers to the falſe prophets.
Mat. v. 13. " Ye are the ſalt of the earth: but
" if the ſalt has loſt his ſavour, where-
" with ſhall it be ſalted? it is thence-
" forth good for nothing but to be caſt
" out, and to be trodden under foot of
" men.
14. " Ye are the light of the world. A
" city that is ſet on a hill cannot be hid;
15. " neither do men light a candle, and
" put it under a buſhell, but on a can-
" dleſtick, and it giveth light unto all
16. " that are in the houſe. Let your light
" ſo ſhine before men, that they may ſee
" your good works, and glorify your
" father which is in heaven.

" Think

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

" Think not that I am come to de- Galilee.
" ſtroy the Law or the Prophets: I 17 Mat. v.
" am not come to deſtroy but to fulfil.
" For verily I ſay unto you, till heaven 18.
" and earth paſs, one jot or one tittle
" ſhall in no wiſe paſs from the Law,
" till all be fulfilled. Whoſoever there- 19.
" fore ſhall break one of theſe leaſt
" commands, and ſhall teach men ſo,
" he ſhall be called the leaſt in the
" kingdom of heaven: but whoſoever
" ſhall do and teach them, the ſame
" ſhall be called great in the kingdom
" of heaven. For I ſay unto you, that 20.
" except your righteouſneſs ſhall ex-
" ceed the righteouſneſs of the Scribes
" and Phariſees, ye ſhall in no caſe enter
" into the kingdom of heaven.
" Ye have heard that it was ſaid by 21.
" them of old time, Thou ſhalt not kill:
" and whoſoever ſhall kill, ſhall be in
" danger of the judgment. But I ſay 22.
" unto you, That whoſoever is angry
" with his brother without a cauſe,
" ſhall be in danger of the judgment:
" and whoſoever ſhall ſay to his bro-
" ther (*a*) Racà, ſhall be in danger of
" the Council: but whoſoever ſhall ſay,
" Thou fool, ſhall be in danger of hell
" fire.
" Therefore, if thou bring thy gift 23.
" to the altar, and there remembreſt
" that thy brother hath ought againſt
" thee; leave there thy gift before the 24.

(*a*) *Raca* is a word of contempt.

Galilee. Mat. V.

" altar, and go thy way; firſt be recon- Anno
" cil'd to thy brother, and then come Ætat. 31.
" and offer thy gift. Miniſt. 2.

25. " Agree with thine adverſary quick-
" ly, while thou art in the way with
" him; leſt at any time the adverſary
" deliver thee to the judge, and the judge
" deliver thee to the officer, and thou be
26. " caſt into priſon. Verily I ſay unto
" thee, Thou ſhalt by no means come
" out thence, till thou haſt paid the ut-
" termoſt farthing.

27. " Ye have heard that it was ſaid by
" them of old time, Thou ſhalt not
28. " commit adultery. But I ſay unto
" you, That whoſoever looketh on a
" woman to luſt after her, has commit-
" ted adultery with her already in his
" heart.

29. " And if thy right eye offend thee,
" pluck it out, and caſt it from thee;
" for it is profitable for thee that one
" of thy members ſhould periſh, and
" not that thy whole body ſhould be
30. " caſt into hell. And if thy right hand
" offend thee, cut it off, and caſt it
" from thee; for it is profitable for thee
" that one of thy members ſhould
" periſh, and not that thy whole body
" ſhould be caſt into hell.

31. " It has been ſaid, whoſoever ſhall
" put away his wife, let him give her
32. " a writing of divorcement. But I ſay
" unto you, that whoſoever ſhall put
" away his wife, ſaving for the cauſe
" of fornication, cauſeth her to commit
adultery:

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" adultery: and whosoever shall marry Galilee.
" her that is divorced, committeth a- Mat. v,
" dultery.
" Again, ye have heard that it has been 33.
" said by them of old time, Thou shalt
" not forswear thy self, but shalt per-
" form unto the Lord thine oaths. But 34.
" I say unto you, swear not at all;
" neither by Heaven, for it is God's
" throne: nor by the Earth, for it is his 35.
" footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for
" it is the city of the great King. Nei- 36.
" ther shalt thou swear by thy head,
" because thou canst not make one hair
" white or black. But let your com- 37.
" munication be, yea, yea; nay, nay;
" for whatsoever *is* more than these,
" cometh of evil.
" Ye have heard that it has been said, 38.
" an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a
" tooth. But I say unto you, that ye 39.
[a] Luke vi. 29. " resist not evil: [a] but whosoever shall
" smite thee on thy right cheek, turn
" to him the other also. And if any 40.
[b] Luke vi. 29. " one will sue thee at the law, [b] and
" take away thy coat, let him have thy
" cloke also. And whosoever shall com- 41.
" pel thee to go a mile, go with him
[c] Luke vi. 30. " twain. [c] Give to him that asketh 42.
" thee; and from him that would bor-
" row of thee, turn not thou away.
" Ye have heard that it has been said, 43.
" Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and
[d] Mat. v. 44. " hate thy enemy: * [d] But I say unto 27. Luke vi.
" you which hear, Love your enemies,
" do good to them which hate you:

Galilee. " Bleſs them that curſe you, and pray Anno
Luke vi. 28. " for them which deſpitefully uſe you Ætat. 31.
Mat. v. 44 " * and perſecute you: that ye may be Miniſt. 2.
45 " the children of your father which is
" in heaven: for he maketh his Sun to
" riſe on the evil and on the good, and
" ſendeth rain on the juſt, and on the
Luke vi. 32 " unjuſt. * [f]For if ye love them which [f] Mat. v. 46.
" love you, what thank have ye? for
" ſinners alſo love thoſe that love them.
Mat. v. 47 " * And if ye ſalute your brethren only,
" what do ye more *than others?* Do
Luke vi. 33 " not even the Publicans ſo? * And if
" ye do good to them which do good
" to you, what thank have ye? for
34. " ſinners alſo do even the ſame. And
" if ye lend to them of whom ye hope
" to receive, what thank have ye? for
" ſinners alſo lend to ſinners, to receive
" as much again.
35. " But love ye your enemies, and do
" good and lend, hoping for nothing
" again, and your reward ſhall be great,
" and ye ſhall be the children of the
" higheſt; for he is kind unto the un-
36. " thankful, and to the evil. Be ye
" therefore merciful, as your Father al-
Mat. v. 48 " ſo is merciful. * Be ye therefore
" perfect, even as your Father which is
" in heaven is perfect.
Mat. vi. 1. " Take heed that ye do not your
" alms before men, to be ſeen of them;
" otherwiſe ye have no reward of your
2. " Father which is in heaven. There-
" fore when thou doſt *thine* alms, do
" not ſound a trumpet before thee,
" as

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" as the hypocrites do, in the Syna- Galilee.
" gogues, and in the Streets, that they Mat. vi.
" may have glory of men, verily, I say
" unto you, they have their reward.
" But when thou dost alms, let not thy 3.
" left hand know what thy right hand
" doeth; that thine alms may be in se- 4.
" cret; and thy Father which seeth in
" secret, himself shall reward thee o-
" penly.
" And when thou prayest, thou shalt 5.
" not be as the hypocrites are; for they
" love to pray standing in the Syna-
" gogues, and in the corners of the
" street, that they may be seen of men;
" verily I say unto you, they have their
" reward. But thou when thou prayest, 6.
" enter into thy closet, and when thou
" hast shut thy door, pray to thy Fa-
" ther which is in secret; and thy Fa-
" ther which seeth in secret, shall re-
" ward thee openly. But when ye 7.
" pray, use not vain repetitions, as the
" heathen do: for they think that they
" shall be heard for their much speak-
" ing. Be not ye therefore like unto 8.
" them; for your Father knoweth what
" things ye have need of before ye ask
" him. After this manner therefore 9.
" pray ye.
" Our Father which art in heaven, 10.
" hallowed be thy name. Thy king-
" dom come. Thy will be done in
" earth as *it is* in heaven. Give us this 11
" day our daily bread. And forgive us 12.
" our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

Galilee. Mat. vi.

" And lead us not into temptation, but
13. " deliver us from evil; for thine is the
" kingdom, and the power, and the
" glory, for ever. *Amen.*
14. " For if ye forgive men their treſ-
" paſſes, your heavenly Father will alſo
15. " forgive you. But if ye forgive not
" men their treſpaſſes, neither will your
" Father forgive your treſpaſſes.
16. " Moreover, when ye faſt, be not
" as the hypocrites, of a ſad counte-
" tenance; for they diſfigure their fa-
" ces, that they may appear unto men
" to faſt. Verily I ſay unto you they
17. " have their reward. But thou when
" thou faſteſt, anoint thy head, and
18. " waſh thy face; that thou appear not
" unto men to faſt, but unto thy Fa-
" ther which is in ſecret; and thy Fa-
" ther which ſeeth in ſecret, ſhall re-
" ward thee openly.
19. " Lay not up for your ſelves trea-
" ſures upon earth, where moth and
" ruſt doth corrupt, and where thieves
20. " break through and ſteal. But lay
" up for your ſelves treaſures in hea-
" ven, where neither moth nor ruſt
" doth corrupt, and where thieves do
" not break through nor ſteal. For
21. " where your treaſure is, there will your
" heart be alſo.
22. " The light of the body is the eye:
" if therefore thine eye be ſingle, thy
" whole body ſhall be full of light.
23. " But if thine eye be evil, thy whole
" body ſhall be full of darkneſs. If
therefore

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" therefore the light that is in thee be Galilee.
" darkneſs, how great is that dark- Mat. vi.
" neſs!
" No man can ſerve two maſters: 24.
" for either he will hate the one, and
" love the other; or elſe he will hold
" to the one, and deſpiſe the other.
" Ye cannot ſerve God and Mammon.
" Therefore I ſay unto you, take no 25.
" thought for your life, what ye ſhall
" eat, or what ye ſhall drink; nor for
" your body, what ye ſhall put on: Is
" not the life more than meat, and the
" body than raiment? Behold the fowls 26.
" of the air; for they ſow not, neither
" do they reap, nor gather into barns;
" yet your heavenly Father feedeth
" them. Are ye not much better than
" they? Which of you by taking thought 27.
" can add one cubit unto his ſtature?
" And why take ye thought for rai- 28.
" ment? Conſider the lillies of the field
" how they grow; they toil not nei-
" ther do they ſpin. And yet I ſay un- 29.
" to you, that even Solomon in all his
" glory was not arrayed like one of
" thoſe. Wherefore if God ſo cloath 30.
" the graſs of the field, which to day
" is, and to morrow is caſt into the
" oven, *ſhall he* not much more *cloath*
" you, O ye of little faith? Therefore 31.
" take no thought, ſaying, what ſhall
" we eat? or what ſhall we drink? or
" wherewithal ſhall we be cloathed?
" (for after all theſe things do the Gen- 32.
" tiles ſeek) for your heavenly Father
" knoweth

Galilee. " knoweth that ye have need of all Anno
Mat. vi. 33. " theſe things. But ſeek ye firſt the Ætat. 31.
" kingdom of God, and his righteouſ- Miniſt. 2.
" neſs, and all theſe things ſhall be ad-
34. " ded unto you. Take therefore no
" thought for the morrow, for the
" morrow ſhall take thought for the
" things of it ſelf: ſufficient to the day
" *is* the evil thereof.
Luke vi. 37. " * [a] Judge not, and ye ſhall not be [a] Mat. vii. 1.
" judged; condemn not, and ye ſhall
" not be condemned; forgive, and ye
Mat. vii. 2. " ſhall be forgiven: * For with what
" judgment ye judge, ye ſhall be judg-
" ed; and with what meaſure ye mete,
" it ſhall be meaſured to you again.
Luke vi. 38. " * Give, and it ſhall be given unto
" you; good meaſure preſſed down, and
" ſhaken together, and running over, ſhall
" men give into your boſom. For with
" the ſame meaſure that ye meet with-
" al, it ſhall be meaſured to you a-
" gain.
39. " And he ſpake a parable unto them,
" Can the blind lead the blind? and
" ſhall they not both fall into the ditch?
40. " The diſciple is not above his maſter:
" but every one that is perfect ſhall be
" as his maſter.
41. " [b] And why beholdeſt thou the mote [b] Mat. vii.
" that is in thy brother's eye, but per- 3, 4, 5.
" ceiveſt not the beam that is in thine
42. " own eye? Either, how canſt thou
" ſay to thy brother, Brother, let me
" pull out the mote that is in thine eye,
" when thou thy ſelf beholdeſt not the

" beam

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" beam that is in thine own eye? Thou Galilee.
" hypocrite, cast out first the beam out 42. Luke vi.
" of thine own eye, and then shalt thou
" see clearly to pull out the mote that
" is in thy brother's eye.
" * Give not that which is holy unto 6. Mat. vii
" dogs, neither cast ye your pearl be-
" fore swine, lest they trample them
" under their feet, and turn again and
" rent you.
" Ask and it shall be given you; seek 7.
" and ye shall find; knock and it shall
" be opened unto you. For every one 8.
" that asketh, receiveth; and he that
" seeketh, findeth; and to him that
" knocketh, it shall be opened. Or 9.
" what man is there of you, whom if
" his Son ask bread, will he give him a
" stone? Or if ask a fish, will he give 10.
" him a serpent? If ye then being evil, 11.
" know how to give good gifts unto
" your children, how much more shall
" your Father which is in heaven give
" good things to them that ask him?
" Therefore all things whatsoever [a] ye 12.
" would that men should do to you, do
" ye even so to them: for this is the
" Law and the Prophets.
" Enter ye in at the strait gate; for 13.
" wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way
" that leadeth to destruction, and many
" there be which go in thereat. Be- 14.
" cause strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is*
" the way which leadeth unto life, and
" few there be that find it.

[a] Luke vi. 31.

" Beware

Galilee. Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

Mat. vii. 15. " Beware of false Prophets, which
" come to you in sheep's cloathing, but
16. " inwardly are ravening wolves. Ye
" shall know them by their fruits:
Luke vi. 44. " * For every tree is known by his own
" fruit: [a] for of thorns men do not [a] Mat. vii.
" gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush 16, 17.
" gather they grapes. For a good tree
43. " bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; nei-
" ther doth a corrupt tree bring forth
" good fruit.
Mat. vii. 18. " * A good tree cannot bring forth
" evil fruit; neither can a corrupt tree
19. " bring forth good fruit. Every tree
" that bringeth not forth good fruit, is
" hewn down and cast into the fire.
Luke vi. 45. " * A good man out of the good trea-
" sure of his heart, bringeth forth that
" which is good; and an evil man out
" of the evil treasure of his heart,
" bringeth forth that which is evil: for
" of the abundance of the heart his
Mat. vii. 20. " mouth speaketh. * Wherefore by
" their fruits ye shall know them.
" Not every one that saith unto me,
21. " Lord, Lord, shall enter into the king-
" dom of heaven; but he that doth the
" will of my Father which is in heaven.
" Many will say to me in that day,
22. " Lord, have we not prophesied in thy
" name? and in thy name have cast
" out devils? and in thy name have
" done many wonderful works? And
23. " then will I profess unto them, I ne-
" ver knew you; depart from me ye
Luke vi. 46. " that work iniquity. * And why call
" ye

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

[a] Mat. vii. 24.

[b] Luke vi. 48.

[c] Mat. vii. 24.

[d] Luke vi. 48, 49.

" ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the Galilee.
" things which I say? [a] Whosoever com- 47. Luke vi.
" eth to me, and heareth my sayings,
" and doeth them, I will shew you to
" whom he is like. * [b] I will liken 24. Mat. vii.
" him unto a wise man * [c] which built 48. Luke vi.
" his house, and digged deep, and laid
" the foundation on a rock; * [d] and 25. Mat. vii.
" the rain descended, and the floods
" came, and the winds blew, and beat
" upon that house; and it fell not, for
" it was founded upon a rock. And 26.
" every one that heareth these sayings
" of mine, and doeth them not, shall
" be likened unto a foolish man which
" built his house upon the sand: and 27.
" the rain descended, and the floods
" came, and the winds blew, and beat
" upon that house; and it fell, and
" great was the fall of it.

And it came to pass when Jesus had 28.
ended these sayings, the people were
astonished at his doctrine. For he 29.
taught them as one having authority,
and not as the Scribes.

SECT.

Capernaum.

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

SECT. XLVIII.

Jeſus cures the Centurion's Servant at Capernaum.

Mat. viii. 1. WHen [*Jeſus*] was come down
Luke vii. 1. from the mountain, great multitudes follow'd him. * Now when he had ended all his ſayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. 2. And a certain (*a*) Centurion's ſervant, who was dear unto him, was ſick of the palſie, grievouſly tormented, * and ready to die. [a] Mat. viii. 5, 6. And when he
Mat. viii. 6. heard of Jeſus, he ſent unto him the el-
Luke vii. 3. ders of the Jews, beſeeching him that he would come and heal his ſervant. 4. And when they came to Jeſus, they beſought him inſtantly, ſaying, That he was worthy for whom he ſhould do 5. this. *For he loveth our nation, and hath* 6. *built us a Synagogue.* [b] Then Jeſus went with them. And when he was now not far from the houſe, the Centurion ſent friends to him, ſaying unto him, [c] *Lord, trouble not thy ſelf, for I am not worthy* 8. *that thou ſhouldeſt enter under my roof.* 7. *Wherefore neither thought I my ſelf worthy to come unto thee:* [d] *but ſay in a word and my ſervant ſhall be healed.* 8, 9, 10. 8. *For I alſo am a man ſet under authority, having Soldiers under me; and I ſay*

[b] Mat. viii.

[c] Mat. viii.

[d] Mat. viii.

(*a*) *Centurion*, an Officer in the *Roman* Army, having the command of an hundred Men.

unto

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

unto one, go, and he goeth; and to another, come, and he cometh; and to my servant, do this, and he doth it. Capernaum

When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that follow'd him, *I say unto you, that I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.* 9. Luke vii.

* *And I say unto you, that many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.* 11. Mat. viii. 12.

And Jesus said unto the Centurion, *Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.* And his Servant was healed in the self same hour. 13. Miracle.

* And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the Servant whole that had been sick. 10. Luke vii.

SECT. XLIX.

Jesus restores life to the Son of the Widow of Naim. Naim.

AND it came to pass the day after, 11.
that [*Jesus*] went into a City called Naim; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. Now 12.
when he came nigh to the gate of the City, behold there was a dead man carried out, the only Son of his Mother, and she was a Widow; and much people

Naim. ple of the City was with her. And Anno
Luke vii. 13. when the Lord ſaw her, he had com- Ætat. 31.
paſſion on her, and ſaid unto her, *weep* Miniſt. 2.
14. *not*. And he came and touched the
bier, (and they that bare him ſtood ſtill)
Miracle. and he ſaid, young man, *I ſay unto thee,*
15. *Ariſe*. And he that was dead, ſat up
and began to ſpeak: and he delivered
him to his Mother.
16. And there came a fear on all; and
they glorified God, ſaying, that *a great*
prophet is riſen up among us; *and that*
17. *God hath viſited his people*. And this ru-
mour of him went forth throughout all
Judea, and throughout all the region
round about.

SECT. L.

John the Baptiſt being in priſon, ſends to Jeſus to enquire who he was. Jeſus does ſeveral Miracles before his Meſſengers. His diſcourſes concerning John, &c.

Mat. xi. 2. NOW [a] when John had heard in the [a] Luke vii.
Luke vii. 19. priſon the works of Chriſt, * cal- 19.
ling unto him [b] two of his diſciples, ſent [b] Mat. xi.
20. *them* unto Jeſus, ſaying, *Art thou he* 2, 3.
that ſhould come, or look we for another?
21. And in that ſame hour he cured many of
their infirmities, and plagues, and of
Miracle. evil Spirits; and unto many that were
22. blind he gave ſight. [c] Then Jeſus an- [c] Mar. xi.
ſwering, ſaid unto them, *Go your way,* 4, 5, 6, 7,
8, 9, 10, 11.
and

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

and tell John what things ye have ſeen Galilee.
and heard; how that the blind ſee, and Luke vii.
the lame walk, the lepers are cleanſed,
the deaf hear, the dead are raiſed, to the
poor the Goſpel is preached. And bleſſed 23.
is he whoſoever ſhall not be offended in
me.

And when the meſſengers of John 24.
were departed, he began to ſpeak unto
the people concerning John. " What
" went ye out into the wilderneſs for
" to ſee? A reed ſhaken with the wind?
" But what went ye out for to ſee? A 25.
" man cloathed in ſoft raiment? Be-
" hold, they which are gorgeouſly ap-
" parelled, and live delicately, are in
" kings courts. But what went ye out 26.
" for to ſee? A prophet? Yea, I ſay
" unto you, and much more than a pro-
" phet. This is he of whom it is writ- 27.
" ten, [*Malachi* iii. 1.] *Behold I ſend*
" *my meſſenger before thy face, which*
" *ſhall prepare thy way before thee.* For 28.
" I ſay unto you, among thoſe that are
" born of women, there is not a greater
" prophet than John the Baptiſt: but
" he that is leaſt in the kingdom of
" God, is greater than he. * And from 12. Mat. xi.
" the days of John the Baptiſt, until
" now, the kingdom of heaven ſuffer-
" eth violence, and the violent take it
" by force. For all the Prophets, and 13.
" the Law propheſied until John. And if 14.
" ye will receive *it*, this is Elias which
" was for to come. He that has ears to 15.
" hear, let him hear.

Galilee. * And all the people that heard *him*, Anno
Luke vii. 29. and the Publicans juſtified God, being Ætat. 31.
30. baptized with the baptiſm of John. But Miniſt. 2.
the Phariſees and Lawyers rejected the
councel of God againſt themſelves, be-
ing not baptized by him.

31. * And the Lord ſaid, " Whereunto * Mat. xi.
" then ſhall I liken the men of this ge- 16, 17, 18,
" neration? and to what are they like? 19.
32. " They are like unto children ſitting in
" the market-place, and calling one to
" another, and ſaying, we have piped
" unto you, and ye have not danced:
" we have mourned to you, and ye
33. " have not wept. For John the Baptiſt
" came neither eating bread nor drinking
34. " wine; and ye ſay he has a devil. The
" Son of man is come eating and drink-
" ing; and ye ſay, Behold, a glutto-
" nous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend
35. " of publicans and ſinners. But wiſdom
" is juſtified of all her children.

SECT. LI.

Jeſus reproaches the Cities in which he had done ſo many Miracles for their Impenitence.

Mat. xi. 20. THen [Jeſus] began to upbraid the Cities wherein moſt of his mighty works were done, becauſe they repented not.

21. " Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto
" thee Bethſaida: for if the mighty
" works

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" works which were done in you, had Galilee.
" been done in (*a*) Tyre and Sidon, they Mat. xi.
" would have repented long ago in sack-
" cloth and ashes. But I say unto you, 22.
" it shall be more tolerable for Tyre
" and Sidon at the day of judgment,
" than for you.
" And thou Capernaum which art 23.
" exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought
" down to hell: for if the mighty
" works which have been done in thee,
" had been done in Sodom, it would
" have remained until this day. But I 24.
" say unto you, that it shall be more
" tolerable for the land of Sodom in
" the day of judgment, than for thee.
At that time Jesus answered and said, 25.
" I thank thee, O Father, Lord of hea-
" ven and earth, because thou hast hid
" these things from the wise and pru-
" dent, and hast revealed them unto
" babes. Even so Father, for so it 26.
" seemed good in thy sight.
" All things are delivered unto me of 27.
" my Father, and no man knoweth the
" Son but the Father, neither knoweth
" any man the Father save the Son,
" and he to whomsoever the Son will
" reveal *him*.
" Come unto me all ye that labour 28.
" and are heavy laden, and I will give
" you rest. Take my yoke upon you, 29.
" and learn of me, for I am meek and

(*a*) *Tyre* and *Sidon*, two Cities of the Gentiles bordering upon *Canaan*.

 " lowly

Galilee. Mat. xi. " lowly in heart; and ye ſhall find reſt " unto your ſouls. For my yoke is " eaſie, and my burden is light.

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

SECT. LII.

Jeſus is entertained in the houſe of a Phariſee. His feet anointed by a woman that had led an ill life. Diſcourſes thereupon.

Luke vii. 36. AND one of the Phariſees deſired [*Jeſus*] that he would eat with him. And he went into the Phariſee's houſe, and ſat down to meat.

37. And behold a woman in the city, which was a ſinner, when ſhe knew that Jeſus ſat at meat in the Phariſee's houſe, brought an alabaſter box of ointment.

38. And ſtood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to waſh his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kiſſed his feet, and

39. anointed them with the ointment. Now when the Phariſee which had bidden him, ſaw it, he ſpake within himſelf, ſaying, *This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him:*

40. *for ſhe is a ſinner.* And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto him, *Simon, I have ſomewhat to ſay unto thee*; and he ſaith,

41. *Maſter, ſay on.* " There was a certain " creditor which had two debtors: the " one ought him five hundred pence,

" and

Anno Ætat. 31. Ministr. 2.

" and the other fifty. And when they Galilee.
" had nothing to pay, he frankly for- 42. Luke vii.
" gave them both. Tell me therefore
" which of them will love him most.
Simon answered and said, *I suppose* 43.
that he to whom he forgave most. And
he said unto him, *thou hast rightly judged.*
And he turned to the woman, and said 44.
unto Simon, *Seest thou this woman? I*
entred into thine house, thou gavest me
no water for my feet: but she hath wash-
ed my feet with tears, and wiped them
with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest 45.
me no kiss: but this woman, since the
time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss
my feet. Mine head with oil thou dost 46.
not anoint; but this woman hath anointed
my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say 47.
unto thee, her sins, which are many, are
forgiven; for she loved much: but
to whom little is forgiven, the same
loveth little. And he said unto her, *Thy* 48.
sins are forgiven.

And they that sat at meat with him, 49.
began to say within themselves, *Who is*
this that forgiveth sins also? And he said
to the woman, *Thy faith hath saved thee,*
go in peace.

Galilee. Anno
Luke viii. Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.

SECT. LIII.

Jesus preaches the Gospel in several Cities. Cures one that was possessed with a Devil blind and dumb. Jesus answers the calumny of the Pharisees, who said he did these things by Beelzebub.

1. AND it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad-tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him;
2. and certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went
3. seven devils. And Joanna, the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministred unto him of their substance.

Mat. xii. 22. * Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that
Miracle. the blind and dumb both spake and
23. saw. And all the people were amazed, and said, *Is not this the Son of David?* But when the Pharisees *
24. } and the Scribes which came down from
Mar. iii. 22 } Jerusalem * heard it, they said, *This*
Mat. xii. 24. *fellow doth not cast out devils, but by*
Mar. iii. 22. *Beelzebub the prince of the devils.* * *He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the*
Mat. xii. 25. *devils casteth out devils.* * ª And Jesus knew

ª Mar. iii. 23.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.
b Mar. iii. 24, 25, 26.
c Mat. xii. 29.
d Mar. iii. 28.
e Mar. iii. 29.

knew their thoughts, and said unto Galilee.
unto them * in parables, "How can Sa- 23. Mar. iii.
" tan cast out Satan? * b Every king- 25. Mat. xii.
" dom divided against it self is brought
" to desolation; and every city or house
" divided against it self, shall not stand.
" And if Satan cast out Satan, he is di- 26.
" vided against himself; how shall then
" his kingdom stand? And if I by Beel- 27.
" zebub cast out devils, by whom do
" your children cast *them out*? therefore
" they shall be your judges. But if I 28.
" cast out devils by the Spirit of God,
" then the kingdom of God is come
" unto you.
" * c No man can enter into a strong 27. Mar. iii.
" man's house, and spoil his goods, ex-
" cept he will first bind the strong man,
" and then he will spoil his house. * He 30. Mat. xii.
" that is not with me, is against me:
" and he that gathereth not with me,
" scattereth abroad. d Wherefore I say 31.
" unto you, all manner of sin and blas-
" phemy shall be forgiven unto men;
" but the blasphemy *against* the holy
" Ghost, it shall not be forgiven unto
" men. And whosoever speaketh a 32.
" word against the son of man, it shall
" be forgiven him: e but whosoever
" speaketh against the holy Ghost, it
" shall not be forgiven him, neither in
" this world, nor in the *world* to come.
" * Because they said he has an unclean 30. Mar. iii.
" Spirit.
" * Either make the tree good, and 33. Mat. xii.
" his fruit good; or else make the tree

Galilee. Mat. xii.

" corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the Anno
" tree is known by *his* fruit. Ætat. 31.
34. " O generation of vipers, how can Miniſt. 2.
" ye, being evil, ſpeak good things?
" for out of the abundance of the heart,
35. " the mouth ſpeaketh. A good man
" out of the good treaſure of the heart,
" bringeth forth good things; and an
" evil man out of the evil treaſure,
36. " bringeth forth evil things. But I ſay
" unto you, that every idle word that
" men ſhall ſpeak, they ſhall give ac-
" count thereof in the day of judgment.
37. " For by thy words thou ſhalt be juſti-
" fied, and by thy words thou ſhalt be
" condemned.
38. Then certain of the Scribes and Pha-
riſees anſwered, ſaying, *Maſter, we*
39. *would ſee a* (a) *ſign from thee.* But he
anſwered and ſaid to them, " An evil
" and adulterous generation ſeeketh af-
" ter a ſign, and there ſhall no ſign be
" given to it, but the ſign of the pro-
40. " phet Jonas. For as Jonas was three
" days and three nights in the whale's
" belly, ſo ſhall the Son of man be three
" days and three nights in the heart of
41. " the earth. The men of Niniveh ſhall
" riſe in judgment with this genera-
" tion, and ſhall condemn it, be-
" cauſe they repented at the preaching
" of Jonas, and behold a greater than
" Jonas *is* here.

(a) *Sign*; that is, Miracle.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" The Queen of the South shall rise Galilee.
" up in judgment with this generation, 42. Mat. xii.
" and shall condemn it: for she came
" from the uttermost parts of the earth
" to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and
" behold a greater than Solomon *is*
" here.

" When the unclean spirit is gone 43.
" out of a man, he walketh through
" dry places, seeking rest, and findeth
" none. Then he saith, I will return 44.
" into my house whence I came out;
" and when he is come, he findeth *it*
" empty, swept and garnished. Then 45.
" goeth he and taketh with himself se-
" ven other spirits more wicked than
" himself, and they enter in and dwell
" there: and the last state of that man
" is worse than the first. Even so shall
" it be also unto this wicked genera-
" tion.

While he yet talked to the people, 46.
[a] behold his mother and brethren stood
without, desiring to speak with him,
[*] and the multitude sat about him, 32. Mar. iii.
[*] and [*they*] could not come at him for 19. Luke viii.
the press.
[*] [b] Then one said unto him, *Behold* 47. Mat. xii.
thy mother and thy brethren stand with-
out, desiring to speak with thee. But 48.
he answered and said unto him that told
him, *Who is my mother? and, who are*
my brethren? And he stretched forth 49.
his hand towards his disciples, and said,
Behold my mother and my brethren. For
whosoever

[a] Mar. iii. 31. Luk. viii. 19

[b] Mar. iii. 32, 33, 34, 35. Luke viii. 20, 21.

Galilee. Mat. xii. 50. *whoſoever ſhall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the ſame is my brother, and ſiſter, and mother.* Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

SECT. LIV.

Sea of Galilee. *Jeſus ſpeaks the Parable of the Sower to the multitudes out of a Ship; explains it to his Diſciples; and ſeveral other Parables.*

Mar. iv. 1. THE ſame day went Jeſus out of the houſe. [a] And he began again to teach by the ſea-ſide; and there were gathered unto him a great multitude, ſo that he entred into a ſhip, and ſat in the ſea, and the whole multitude
Luke viii. 4. was by the ſea, on the land. * And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every
Mar. iv. 2. city, * [b] he taught them many things by parables, and ſaid unto them in his
3. doctrine, "Hearken, behold there went
4. "out a ſower to ſow: And it came to "paſs as he ſowed, ſome fell by the
Luke viii. 5. } "way ſide, * and it was trodden down,
Mar. iv. 4. } "and the fowls of the air came and de-
5. "voured it up; and ſome fell on ſtony "ground where it had not much earth,
"and immediately it ſprang up, becauſe
6. "it had no depth of earth. But when
Luke viii. 6. "the ſun was up, it was ſcorched, * be-
Mar. iv. 6. "cauſe it lacked moiſture, * and be-
"cauſe it had no root, it withered a-
8. "way. And ſome fell among thorns,
"and

[a] Mat. xiii. 1, 2.

[b] Mat. xiii. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. Luk. viii. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" and the thorns grew up, and choaked Sea of Galilee.
" it, and it yielded no fruit. And other
" fell on good ground, and did yield
" fruit that sprang up and encreased,
" and brought forth some thirty, and
" some sixty, and some an hundred.

a Mat. xiii. 9. Mar. iv. 9.

* a And when he had said these things, 8. Luke viii.
he cried, *He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

* And when he was alone, * his dis- { 10. Mar. iv. / 9. Luke viii.
ciples * that were with him with the 10. Mar. iv.

b Mat. xiii. 10. Luk. viii. 9. c Mat. xiii. 11. Luk. viii. 10.

twelve, b asked of him, * *Why speakest* 9. Mat. xiii.
thou to them in parables? * *What might* 9. Luke viii.
this parable be? * c And he said unto 11. Mar. iv.
them, " Unto you it is given to know
" the mystery of the kingdom of God:
" but unto them that are without, all
" *these* these things are done in para-
" bles: * For whosoever hath, to him 12. Mat. xiii.
" shall be given, and he shall have more
" abundance: but whosoever hath not,
" from him shall be taken away, even
" that he hath. Therefore speak I to 13
" them in parables. d That seeing they 12. Mar. iv.
" may see, and not perceive; and hear-
" ing they may hear, and not under-
" stand; lest at any time they should
" be converted, and *their* sins should be
" forgiven them. * And in them is 14. Mat. xiii.
" fulfilled the prophesie of Esaias [vi.
" 9, 10.] which saith, *By hearing ye*
" *shall hear, and shall not understand;*
" *and seeing ye shall see, and shall not*
" *perceive. For this peoples heart* 15.
" *is waxed gross, and their ears are*
" *dull of hearing, and their eyes they*

d Mat. xiii. 13. Luk. viii. 10.

Sea of Galilee. " *have closed; left at any time they* Anno
Mat. xiii. " *should see with* their *eyes, and hear* Ætat. 31.
" *with their ears, and should understand* Minist. 2.
" *with* their *heart, and should be con-*
16. " *verted, and I should heal them.* But
" blessed *are* your eyes, for they see;
17. " and your ears, for they hear. For
" verily I say unto you, that many pro-
" phets and righteous men have desired
" to see those things which ye see,
" and have not seen them; and to hear
" those things which ye hear, and have
Mar. iv. 13. " not heard them. * And he said unto
" them, know ye not this parable? and
" how then will ye know all parables?
Mat. xiii. 18. " * [a] Hear ye therefore the parable of [a] Luke viii,
" the sower. * The seed is the word 11.
Luke viii. 11. " of God. * The sower soweth the
Mar. iv. 14. } " word. * [b] When any one heareth the [b] Mar. iv.
Mat. xiii. 19. } " word of the kingdom, and under- 15, 16, 17,
" standeth *it* not, then cometh the wic- 18, 19.
" ked one, and catcheth away that Luke viii.
" which was sown in his heart, * left 12, 13, 14.
Luke viii. 12. " [he] should believe and be saved.
" * This is he which received the seed
Mat. xiii. 19. " by the way side.
20. " But he that received the seed into
" stony places, the same is he that hear-
" eth the word, and anon with joy re-
21. " ceiveth it; yet hath he not root in
" himself, but dureth for a while: for
" when tribulation or persecution ariseth
" because of the word, by and by he is
" offended.

" He

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2. " He also that received seed among Sea of Galilee.
" the thorns, is he that heareth the 22. Mat. xiii.
" word; and the care of this world,
* Mat. xiii. " and the deceitfulness of riches, * * and 19. Mar. iv.
22. " the lusts of other things entring in,
" choke the word, and it becometh un-
" fruitful. * But he that received seed 23. Mat. xiii.
" into the good ground, is he that hear-
" eth the word and understandeth *it*,
" which also beareth fruit, and bringeth
" forth some an hundred fold, some six-
" ty, some thirty.
b Mar. iv. * And he said unto them, b " No man { 21. Mar. iv.
21. " when he hath lighted a candle, co- { 16. Luk. viii.
" vereth it with a vessel, or putteth it
" under a bed; but setteth it on a can-
" dlestick, that they which enter in may
c Mar. iv. " see the light. c For nothing is secret 17.
22. " that shall not be made manifest; nei-
" ther any thing hid, that shall not be
" made known and come abroad. * If 23. Mar. iv.
" any man have ears to hear, let him
" hear. And he said unto them, 24.
" Take heed what ye hear: with what
" measure ye mete, it shall be measured
" to you: and unto you that hear shall
d Mar. iv. " more be given. * d Take heed there- 18. Luke viii.
25. " fore how ye hear: for whosoever hath,
" to him shall be given; and whoso-
" ever hath not, from him shall be ta-
" ken even that which he seemeth to
" have.
* Another parable put [*Jesus*] forth 24. Mat. xiii.
unto them, saying, " The kingdom of
" heaven is likened unto a man which
" sowed good seed in his field. But
" while

Sea of Galilee, " while men ſlept, his enemy came Anno
xiii. Mat. 25. " and ſowed tares among the wheat, Ætat. 31.
26. " and went his way. But when the blade Miniſt. 2.
" was ſprung up, and brought forth
" fruit, then appeared the tares alſo.
27. " So the ſervants of the houſholder
" came and ſaid unto him, Sir, didſt not
" thou ſow good ſeed in thy field? from
28. " whence then hath it tares? He ſaid
" unto them, an enemy hath done this.
" The ſervants ſaid unto him, Wilt
" thou then that we go and gather them
29. " up? But he ſaid nay; leſt while ye
" gather up the tares, ye root up alſo
30. " the wheat with them. Let both grow
" together until the harveſt; and in
" the time of harveſt I will ſay to the
" reapers, Gather ye together firſt the
" tares, and bind them in bundles to
" burn them, but gather the wheat into
" my barn.

Mar. iv. 26. * And he ſaid, " So is the kingdom
" of God, as if a man ſhould caſt ſeed
27. " into the ground, and ſhould ſleep, and
" riſe night and day, and the ſeed ſhould
" ſpring and grow up, he knoweth not
28. " how. For the earth bringeth forth
" fruit of her ſelf, firſt the blade, then
" the ear, after that the full corn in the
29. " ear. But when the fruit is brought
" forth, immediately he putteth in the
" ſickle, becauſe the harveſt is come.

Mat. xiii. 31. [a] Another parable put he forth unto [a] Mar. iv.
Mar. iv. 30. them, ſaying, " * Whereunto ſhall we 30.
" liken the kingdom of God? or with
" what compariſon ſhall we compare it?

* The

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" * The kingdom of heaven [a] is like to Galilee.
" a grain of mustard-seed, which a man 31. Mat. xiii.
" took and sowed in his field, * [b] which 31. Mat. iv.
[a] Mar. iv. 31. " when it is sown in the earth, is less
[b] Mat. xiii. " than all the seeds that be in the earth.
32. " But when it is sown, it groweth up 32.
" and becometh greater than all herbs,
" and shooteth out great branches, * and 32. Mat. xiii.
" becometh a great tree: [c] so that the
[c] Mar. iv. 32. " birds of the air come and lodge in the
" branches thereof.

Another parable spake he unto them. 33.
" The kingdom of heaven is like unto
" leaven which a woman took and hid
" in three measures of meal, till the
" whole was leavened.

[d] Mat. xiii. * [d] And with many such parables 33. Mar. iv.
34. spake he the word unto them as they were able to hear *it*. But without a 34. parable spake he not unto them. And when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples. * That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet [*Psal.* lxxviii. 2.] saying, *I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things that have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.*

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, 36. Mat. xiii. and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, *Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.*

He answered and said unto them, 37.
" He that soweth the good seed, is the
" Son of man: the field is the world: 38.
" the good seed are the children of the

" kingdom;

Galilee. xiii. Mat. 39. " kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one: the enemy " that sowed them is the devil: the harvest is the end of the world; and the 40. " reapers are the angels. As therefore " the tares are gathered and burnt in the " fire; so shall it be in the end of this 41. " world. The Son of man shall send " forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things " that offend, and them which do ini- 42. " quity: and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing " and gnashing of teeth.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

43. " Then shall the righteous shine forth " as the sun in the kingdom of their " Father. Who hath ears to hear, let " him hear.

44. Again, " The kingdom of heaven is " like unto treasure hid in a field; the " which when a man hath found, he " hideth, and for joy thereof, goeth " and selleth all that he hath and buyeth that field.

45. Again, " The kingdom of heaven is " like unto a merchant-man, seeking 46. " goodly pearls: who when he had " found one pearl of great price, he " went and sold all that he had, and " bought it.

47. Again, " The kingdom of heaven is " like unto a net that was cast into the " sea, and gathered of every kind. 48. " Which when it was full, they drew " to shore, and sat down, and gathered " the good into vessels, but cast the bad " away.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" away. So shall it be at the end of the Galilee.
" world: the angels shall come forth, 49. Mat. xiii.
" and sever the wicked from among the
" just. And shall cast them into the 50.
" furnace of fire: there shall be wailing
" and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus saith unto them, *Have ye not* 51.
understood all these things? They say
unto him, *Yea, Lord.* Then said he 52.
unto them, *Therefore every Scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is an housholder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.*

And it came to pass, that when Jesus 53.
had finished these parables, he departed
thence.

SECT. LV.

Jesus goes into a Ship with his disciples; there ariseth a Storm, which he layeth.

NOW it came to pass on a certain 22. Luk. viii.
day, that [*Jesus*] went into a Ship
with his disciples. *And the same day, 35. Mar. iv.
when even was come, [*and*] * Jesus saw 18. Mat. viii.
great multitudes about him, * he said 22. Luk. viii.
[a] Mat. viii. unto them, [a] *Let us go over unto the*
18. *other side of the Lake.*
Mar. iv. 35. * And a certain Scribe came, and said 19. Mat. viii.
unto him, *Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.* And Jesus 20.
saith unto him, *The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but*

Sea of Galilee, or Lake of Tyberias. Mat. viii. 21. *the ſon of man hath not where to lay his head.* Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

And another of his diſciples ſaid unto him, *Lord ſuffer me firſt to go and bury my Father.* But Jeſus ſaid unto him, *Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.*

Mar. iv. 36. * And when they had ſent away the multitude they took him, even as he
Mat. viii. 23. was in the ſhip: * And when he was
entred into a ſhip his diſciples followed
Luk. viii. 22. him. * And they launched forth, * and
Mar. iv. 36. there were alſo with him other little ſhips.
Mat. viii. 24. * [b] and behold there aroſe a great * [c] ſtorm
Mar. iv. 37. of wind, and the waves beat into the ſhip
Mat. viii. 24. * [d] inſomuch that the ſhip was cover'd
Luke viii. 23. with the waves: * and [*they*] were in
Mar. iv. 38. jeopardy. * [e] And [*Jeſus*] was in the
hinder part of the ſhip aſleep on a pil-
Mat. viii. 25. low: * And his diſciples came to him
Mar. iv. 38. and awoke him, ſaying, * *Maſter careſt thou not that we periſh?* And he
39. aroſe and rebuked the wind, and ſaid
Miracle. unto the ſea, *Peace, be ſtill:* and the
wind ceaſed, and there was a great calm.
40. And he ſaid unto them, *Why are ye ſo fearful? how is it that ye have no faith?*
41. } And they feared exceedingly and * [f] won-
Luk. viii. 25. } dred, ſaying one to another, *what manner of man is this? for he commandeth even the winds and water* [and] * [g] *the winds and ſea obey him?*

[b] Mar. iv. 37. Luke viii. 23.
[c] Mat. viii. 24. Mar. iv. 37. Luke viii. 23.
[d] Mar. iv. 37. Luke viii. 23.
[e] Mat. viii. 24, 25, 26. Luke viii. 23, 24, 25.
[f] Mat. viii. 26, 27. Mar. iv. 41.
[g] Luke viii. 25.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

Gadara.

SECT. LVI.

Jesus goes into the Country of the Gadarenes, one possessed with devils meets him, he casteth them out, they go into a Herd of Swine.

[a] Mat. viii. 28. Luk. viii. 26.

[a] AND they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes * which is over against Galilee: * and when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs * a certain man which had devils a long time, and [b] Mar. v. 3. ware no cloths, [b] neither abode in any house, but in the tombs, * and no man could bind him, no not with chains: * exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. * Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him. And always night and day he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying and cutting himself [c] Luk. viii. 28. with stones. [c] But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him [*and*] [d] Mat. viii. 29. Luk. viii. 28. * fell down before him, * [d] and cried with a loud voice, and said, *what have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou son of the most high God? I adjure thee, by God, that thou torment me not.* * *Art thou come*

1. Mar. v. 26. Luk. 8. 2. Mar. v. 27. Luk. viii. 3. Mar. v. 28. Mat. viii. 4. Mar. v. 5. 6. 28. Luk. viii. 7. Mar. v.

Gadara. *hither to torment us before our time?* Anno
Mat. viii. 29. * [e] For he had commanded the unclean Ætat. 31.
Luk. viii. 29. ſpirit to come out of the man. (For Miniſt. 2.
oftentimes it had caught him and he [e] Mar. v. 8.
was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was
driven of the devil into the wilderneſs)
30. And Jeſus asked him ſaying, *what is thy*
name? * And he anſwered ſaying, [f] *my* [f] Luk. viii.
Mar. viii. 9. *name is Legion: for we are many:* * be- 30.
Luk. viii. 30. cauſe many devils were entred into him.
31. [g] And they beſought him * much * that [g] Mar. v. 10.
Mar. v. 10. } he would not command them * away out
Luk. viii. 31. } of the country * to go out into the deep:
Mar. v. 10. * [h] and there was a good way off from [h] Mar. v. 11.
Luk. viii. 31.
Mat. viii. 30. them * nigh to the mountains [i] a great Luk. viii.
Mar. v. 11. herd of ſwine feeding, and all the de- 32
vils beſought him ſaying, * [k] *if thou caſt* [i] Mat. viii.
Mat. viii. 31. *us out, ſuffer us to go into the herd of* 30. 31.
Mar. v. 13. *ſwine.* * And forthwith Jeſus gave [k] Mar. v. 12.
Miracle. them leave. * And he ſaid unto them,
Mat. viii. 32. } *Go.* * [l] Then went the devils out of [l] Mat. viii.
Luk. viii. 33. } the man and entred into the ſwine, 32.
Mat. viii. 32. * [m] and behold the whole herd of ſwine Mar. v. 13.
[m] Luk. viii.
Mar. v. 13. ran violently down a ſteep place into 33, 34, 35.
the ſea * and were choked in the ſea,
14. (they were about two thouſand) and
Mat. viii. 33. they that fed the ſwine fled, * and went
their ways into the city, and told every
thing * in the city and in the country,
Mar. v. 14.
Mat. viii. 33. * and what was befallen to the poſſeſſed
of the devils. * And they went out to ſee
Mar. v. 14.
15. what it was that was done, and they
come to Jeſus and ſee him that was
poſſeſſed with the devils and had the
Luk. viii. 35. Legion, * [n] ſitting at the feet of Jeſus, [n] Mar. v. 15,
clothed 16.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

cloathed and in his right mind, and they were afraid. They also which saw it told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed, * and also concerning the swine; * and behold the whole city [*and*] * the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about * came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw him, ° they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts * for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship and returned back again. * And when he was come into the ship, ᵖ he that had been possessed with devils, prayed him that he might be with him. Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him.

Gadara.

36. Luk. viii.

16. Mar. v.

34. Mat. viii;

37. Luk. viii.

34. Mat. viii.

°Mar. v. 17. Luk. viii. 37.

18. Mar. v.

ᵖ Luk. viii. 38, 39.

19.

SECT. LVII.

Jesus cureth a Woman troubled with a flux of blood, and bringeth to life Jairus's Daughter.

Galilee near the Sea.

ª Luk. viii. 40.

ª AND when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side much people gathered unto him, * for they were all waiting for him * and he

21. Mar. v.

40. Luk. viii.

21. Mar. v.

Galilee near the Sea. Mat. ix. 18. Mar. v. 22. Luk. viii. 41. Mat. ix. 18. Mar. v. 23. Luk. viii. 41. Mar. v. 23. Luk. viii. 42. Mar. v. 23. Mat. ix. 19. Mar. v. 25. Mat. ix. 20. Mar. v. 26. Mar. v. 27. Mat. ix. 21. Mar. v. 29. Mat. ix. 22. Mar. v. 30. Miracle. Luk. viii. 45. Mar. v. 31. Luk. viii. 45. Mar. v. 31.

was nigh unto the Sea. * While he spake these things unto them * behold there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him * [b] he fell down at Jesus feet * and worshipped him * [c] and besought him greatly * that he would come into his House: * [d] saying, *My little daughter lieth at the point of death*, (* For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying) * *I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall live.* * [e] And Jesus arose and followed him, and so did his disciples, [f] * and much people followed him and thronged him, * [g] (and behold a woman which was diseas'd with an issue of blood twelve years, * and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse. When she had heard of Jesus, [h] came in the press behind, and touched his garment: * [i] for she said within herself, *If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.* * [k] And straightway the fountain of her blood was dryed up, [l] and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague * from that hour. *And Jesus immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press [m] and said, *Who touched my cloths?* * When all denied, Peter * and his disciples * that were with him said, Master, * *Thou seest*

Anno. Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

[b] Mar. v. 22.
[c] Luk. viii. 41.
[d] Mat. ix. 18.
[e] Mar. v. 24.
[f] Luk. viii. 42.
[g] Mar. v. 25. Luk. viii. 43.
[h] Mat. ix. 20. Luk. viii. 44.
[i] Mar. v. 22.
[k] Luk. viii. 44.
[l] Mat. ix. 22.
[m] Luk. viii. 45.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

seest * [n] *the multitude throng thee and press thee, and sayest thou, who touched me?* And Jesus said, *some body hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.* * And he looked round to see her that had done this thing. * [o] And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling; and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately. * But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, [p] he said, *Daughter be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole;* * *go in peace and be whole of thy plague.* * [q] While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying to him, *Thy daughter is dead,* * *why troublest thou the Master any farther?* [r] As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, *Be not afraid, only believe* * *and she shall be made whole.* * [s] And when Jesus came into the * house of the ruler of the synagogue he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John, the brother of James, * and the father and mother of the maiden, * And [*when he*] saw the people and the minstrels making a noise, * the tumult, and them that [t] wept and wailed greatly. And when he was come in, he saith unto them, *Why make ye this ado and weep?* * *Give place, for the maid is not dead but sleepeth.*

Galilee. near the Sea. 45, 46. Luk. viii.
32. Mar. v.
47. Luk. viii.
22. Mat. ix.
34. Mar. v.
49. Luk. viii.
35. Mar. v.
36.
49. Luk. viii.
23. Mat. ix.
38. Mar. v. 37.
51. Luk. viii.
23. Mat. ix.
38. Mar. v.
39.
24. Mat. ix.

[n] Mar. v. 31.
[o] Mar. v. 33. Luk. viii. 47.
[p] Mar. v. 34. Luk. viii. 48.
[q] Mar. v. 35. Luk. viii. 49.
[r] Luk. viii. 50.
[s] Luk. viii. 51.
[t] Luk viii. 52.

Galilee, near the Sea. Capernaum. Jairus's houſe.

Mar. v. 40. *ſleepth.* [v] And they laughed him to ſcorn. Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.
* [x] But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of [v]Mar.v.40.
the damſel, and them that were with Luk. viii.
him, and entreth in where the damſel 53.
41. was lying. And he took the damſel by [x]Mat.ix.25.
the hand, and ſaid unto her, *Talitha* Luk. viii.
Miracle. *cumi*, which is being interpreted *Damſel* 54.
Luk. viii. 55. *(I ſay unto thee) ariſe:* * and her ſpi-
rit came again, [y] and ſhe aroſe ſtraight- [y]Mat.ix.25.
Mar. v. 42. way * and walked, for ſhe was of Luk. viii.
Luk. viii. 55. the age of twelve years: * and he com- 55.
Mar. v. 42. manded * that ſomething ſhould be gi-
Luk. viii. 56. ven her to eat. * [z] And her parents were [z]Mar.v.42.
aſtoniſhed, * with a great aſtoniſhment,
Mar. v. 42. Luk. viii. 56. * but he charged them ſtraitly that they
ſhould tell no man what was done.
Mat. ix. 26. * And the fame thereof went abroad into
all that land.

SECT. LVIII.

Capernaum. *Jeſus cureth two that were blind.*

Mat. ix. 27. AND when Jeſus departed thence,
two blind men followed him, cry-
ing, and ſaying, *Thou ſon of David,*
28. *have mercy on us.* And when he was
come into the houſe, the blind men came
to him: and Jeſus ſaith unto them, *Be-*
lieve ye that I am able to do this? They
29. ſaid unto him, *yea Lord.* Then touched
he their eyes, ſaying, *According to your*
Miracle. 30. *faith, be it unto you.* And their eyes
were opened: and Jeſus ſtraitly char-
ged them, ſaying, *See that no man*
know

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

know it. But they when they were departed, ſpread abroad his fame in all that country. Capernaum. 31. Mat. ix.

SECT. LIX.

Jeſus cureth one that was dumb and poſſeſſed with a Devil.

AS they went out, behold they brought to him a dumb man poſſeſſed with a devil. And when the devil was caſt out, the dumb ſpake: and the multitudes marvelled, ſaying, *It was never ſo ſeen in Iſrael.* But the Phariſees ſaid, *He caſteth out devils through the prince of the devils.* 32. Mat. ix. 33. Miracle. 34.

SECT. LX.

Jeſus goes to Nazareth, is deſpiſed of his countrymen becauſe of his mean condition. Nazareth.

[a] Mat. xiii. 54.

AND [*Jeſus*] went out from thence and came into his own country, and his diſciples follow'd him. And when the ſabbath day was come, he began to teach in the ſynagogue, and many hearing *him* were aſtoniſhed, ſaying, *From whence hath this man theſe things? and what wiſdom is this which is given unto him, that even ſuch mighty works are wrought by his hands?* [*b] *Is not this the carpenter's ſon? Is not his* 1. Mar. vi. 2.

[b] Mar. vi. 3. 55. Mat. xiii.

mother

Nazareth, *mother called Mary? and his brethren* Anno
James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? Ætat. 31.
Mat. xiii. 56. *And his Sisters, are they not all with us?* Minist. 2.
Mar. vi. 3. *whence then hath this man all these* [c] Mat. xiii.
4. *things?* * [c] And they were offended 57, 58.
at him. But Jesus said unto them, *A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own Kin, and in his own house.*

Miracle. 5. And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed *them.* And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

SECT. LXI.

Galilee.

Jesus goes and teaches about the Cities and Villages and heals all sicknesses.

Mat. ix. 35. [d] AND Jesus went about all the cities and villages teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sick- [d] Mar. vi. 6.
36. ness and every disease among the people. But when he saw the multitudes he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered
37. abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. Then saith he unto his disciples, *The*
38. *harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.*

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

Galilee.

SECT. LXII.

Jesus sends out the twelve Apostles to preach the Gospel, and to heal Diseases and cast out Devils.

[a] Mat. x. 1. Mar. vi. 7. [a] THEN [*Jesus*] called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils [*and*] * unclean spirits, to cast them [b] Luk. ix. 1. out, [b] and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

1. Luk. ix. 1. Mat x.

2. Now the names of the twelve Apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, 3. Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publican, James *the son* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose firname was Thaddeus, 4. Simon the Canaanite, 5. and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. [c] These twelve Jesus sent forth, * two by two, * and commanded them saying, *Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not. But go* 6. *rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel* * *to preach the kingdom of God.* * *And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.* [d] *Heal the sick,* 8. *cleanse the Lepers, raise the dead,* [e] *cast out devils, freely ye have received, freely give.* * [f] And he commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey,

[c] Mar. vi. 7. Luk. ix. 2.

7. Mar. vi. 5. Mat. x.

2. Luk. ix. 7. Mat. x.

[d] Luk. ix. 2. [e] Mar. vi. 7.

[f] Luk. ix. 3.

8. Mar. vi.

journey, ſave a ſtaff only, [*ſaying*] Anno
Galilee. Ætat. 31,
Mat. x. 9. **[s] Provide neither gold nor ſilver, nor* Miniſt. 2.
10. *braſs in your purſes: Nor ſcrip for your* [s] Mar. vi. 8.
journey, neither two coats, neither ſhoes,
Mar. vi. 9. *nor ſtaves: * But be ſhod with ſandals,*
Mat. x. 10. *and not put on two coats (* for the*
workman is worthy of his meat.) And
11. } *into whatſoever city or town, * and what-*
Luk. ix. 4. } *ſoever houſe ye enter into, * enquire*
Mat. x. 11. *who in it is worthy; and *[h] there abide* [h] Mat. x. 11.
Mar. vi. 10, *till ye depart from that place.* Luk. ix. 4.

Mat. x. 12 " * And when ye come into an houſe,
13. " ſalute it, and if the houſe be worthy
" let your peace come upon it; but if
" it be not worthy, let your peace re-
" turn to you: and whoſoever ſhall [i] Mar. vi. 11.
14. " not receive you, nor hear your words, Luk. ix. 5.
" when ye depart out of that houſe or
" city, ſhake off the duſt of your feet
Mar. vi. 11. } " * for a teſtimony againſt them. *[k] Ve- [k] Mar. vi. 11.
Mat. x. 15. } " rily I ſay unto you, it ſhall be more
" tolerable for the land of Sodom and
" Gomorrha in the day of judgment,
" than for that city.
Mat. ix. 16. " Behold, I ſend you forth as ſheep
" in the midſt of wolves: be ye there-
" fore wiſe as ſerpents, and harmleſs
17. " as doves. But beware of men, for
" they will deliver you up to the coun-
" cels, and they ſhall ſcourge you in
18. " their ſynagogues. And ye ſhall be
" brought before governours and kings
" for my ſake, for a teſtimony againſt
19. " them and the Gentiles. But when
" they deliver you up, take no thought
" how or what ye ſhall ſpeak: for it
" ſhall

Anno Ætat. 31. Miniſt. 2.

" ſhall be given you in that ſame hour Galilee.
" what ye ſhall ſpeak. For it is not 20. Mat. x.
" ye that ſpeak, but the ſpirit of your
" Father which ſpeaketh in you. And
" the brother ſhall deliver up the bro- 21.
" ther to death, and the father the
" child; and the children ſhall riſe up
" againſt *their* parents, and cauſe them
" to be put to death. And ye ſhall be 22.
" hated of all men for my names ſake,
" but he that endureth to the end,
" ſhall be ſaved. But when they per- 23.
" ſecute you in this city, flee ye into ano-
" ther: for verily I ſay unto you, ye
" ſhall not have gone over the cities of
" Iſrael, 'till the ſon of man be come.
" The diſciple is not above *his* Ma- 24.
" ſter, nor the ſervant above his Lord.
" It is enough for the diſciple that he 25.
" be as his Maſter, and the ſervant as
" his Lord: if they have called the
" Maſter of the houſe Beelzebub, how
" much more *ſhall they call* them of his
" houſhold? Fear them not therefore, 26.
" for there is nothing covered, that
" ſhall not be revealed; and hid that
" ſhall not be known. What I tell you 27.
" in darkneſs, *that* ſpeak ye in light:
" and what ye hear in the ear, *that*
" preach ye upon the houſe tops. And 28.
" fear not them which kill the body,
" but are not able to kill the ſoul: but
" rather fear him which is able to
" deſtroy both ſoul and body in
" hell.

" Are

Galilee. Anno
Mat. x. " Are not two ſparrows ſold for a Ætat. 31.
29. " farthing? and one of them ſhall not Miniſt. 2.
" fall on the ground without your Fa-
30. " ther. But the very hairs of your
" head are all numbred. Fear ye not
31. " therefore, ye are of more value than
" many ſparrows. Whoſoever there-
32. " fore ſhall confeſs me before men,
" him will I confeſs alſo before my
33. " Father which is in heaven. But who-
" ſoever ſhall deny me before men,
" him will I alſo deny before my Fa-
" ther which is in heaven.
" Think not that I am come to ſend
34. " peace on earth: I came not to ſend
35. " peace, but a ſword. For I am come
" to ſet a man at variance againſt his
" father, and the daughter againſt her
" mother, and the daughter-in-law
36. " againſt her mother-in-law. And a
" mans foes *ſhall be* they of his own
" houſhold.
37. " He that loveth father or mother
" more than me, is not worthy of me,
" and he that loveth ſon or daughter
" more than me, is not worthy of me;
38. " and he that taketh not his croſs, and
" followeth after me, is not worthy of
39. " me. He that findeth his life ſhall
" loſe it: and he that loſeth his life
" for my ſake ſhall find it.
" He that receiveth you, receiveth
40. " me, and he that receiveth me, recei-
" veth him that ſent me. He that re-
41. " ceiveth a prophet in the name of a
" prophet, ſhall receive a prophet's re-

" ward;

Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2.

" ward; and he that receiveth a righ- Galilee.
" teous man, in the name of a righteous
" man, shall receive a righteous man's
" reward. And whosoever shall give 42. Mat. x.
" to drink unto one of these little ones
" a cup of cold water only, in the name
" of a disciple, verily I say unto you,
" he shall in no wise lose his reward.

And it came to pass when Jesus had 1. Mat. xi.
made an end of commanding his twelve
disciples, he departed thence to teach
[l]Mar.vi.12. and preach in their cities. *[l] And they 12. Luk. ix.
departed and went through the towns,
preaching the gospel, * and preached 12. Mar. vi.
that men should repent. And they cast 13.
out many devils, and anointed with oyl
[m]Luk.ix.vi. many that were sick, [m] and healed *them*.

The end of the second year of Christ's Ministry.

SECT. LXIII.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

John the Baptist beheaded by Herod.

[a]Mat. xiv. 6. [a] AND when a convenient time was 21. Mar. vi.
come, that Herod on his birth
day made a supper to his lords, high
captains and chief estates of Galilee:
[b]Mar. vi. 22. [b] * The daughter of Herodias * came in 6. Mar. xiv. 22. Mar. vi.
and danced * before them, and pleased { 6. Mat. xiv. 22. Mar. vi.
Herod, * and them that sat with him.
The king said unto the damsel, *Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt and I will give*
[c]Mat.xiv.7. *it thee.* [c] And he sware unto her, *What-*

soever

Galilee. *ſoever thou ſhalt ask of me, I will give* Anno
Mar. vi. 23. *it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.* Ætat. 32.
24. And ſhe went forth, and ſaid unto her Miniſt. 3.
mother, *What ſhall I ask?* and ſhe ſaid
Mat. xiv. 8. *The head of John the Baptiſt.* * And
ſhe being before inſtructed of her mother
Mar. vi. 25. * ſhe came in ſtraightway with haſte
unto the king, and asked ſaying, [d] *I* [d] Mat. xiv
will that thou give me by and by in a 8, 9.
charger, the head of John the Baptiſt.
26. And the king was exceeding ſorry; * ne-
Mat. xiv 9. vertheleſs for * his oaths ſake, and for
Mar. vi. 26. their ſakes which ſat with him * at meat
Mat. xiv. 9. * he would not reject her, [*and*] * he
Mar. vi. 26.
Mat. xiv. 9. commanded *it* to be given *her*. *[e] And [e] Mat. xiv.
Mar. vi. 27. immediately the king ſent an executio- 10.
ner, and commanded his head to be
brought: and he went and beheaded him
28. in the priſon, [f] and brought his head in [f] Mar. xiv.
a charger, and gave it to the damſel, 11, 12.
and the damſel gave it to her mother.
29. And when his diſciples heard *of it*, they
came and took up his corps, and laid
Mat. xiv. 12. it in a tomb, * and went and told Je-
ſus.

SECT. LXIV.

The opinion of Herod and his Courtiers concerning Jeſus.

Mat. xiv. 1. [a] AT that time Herod the Tetrarch [a] Mar. vi.
Mar. vi. 14. heard of the fame of Jeſus * (for 14.
Luk. ix. 7. his name was ſpread abroad) * and he Luk. ix. 7.
Mat. xiv. 2. was perplexed, * and ſaid unto his ſer-
vants, *This is John the Baptiſt, he is*
riſen

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

risen from the dead, and therefore migh- Galilee.
ty works do shew forth themselves in him.
[a] * Others said, *That it is Elias.* * And 15. Mar. vi.
others said, *That it is a prophet, or as*
one of the prophets, * *that one of the old* 8. Luk. ix.
prophets was risen again. * But when 16. Mar. vi.
Herod heard *thereof,* he said, * *John have* 9. Luk. ix.
I beheaded: but who is this of whom I
hear such things? * *It is John whom I* 16. Mar. vi.
beheaded, he is risen from the dead; 9. Luk. ix.
* and he desired to see him.

[a] Luk. ix. 8.

SECT. LXV.

The Apostles return to Jesus, he feedeth five thousand with five Barley Loaves and two Fishes.

[a] AND the Apostles gathered them- 30. Mar. vi.
[a] Luk. ix. 10. selves together unto Jesus, and
told him all things, both what they had
done, and what they had taught. And 31.
he said unto them, *Come ye your selves*
apart into a desert place, and rest a
while: for there were many coming and
going, and they had no leisure so much
[b] Mat. xiv. 13. as to eat. [b] And they departed into a 32.
desert place by ship privately, * belong- 10. Luk. ix.
ing to the city called Bethsaida, * over 1. Joh. vi.
the Sea of Galilee, *which is the sea* of Near Bethsaida.
[c] Mat xiv. 13. Luk. ix. 11. Joh. vi. 2. Tiberias. * [c] And the people saw 33. Mar. vi.
them departing, and many knew him,
and ran a foot thither out of all cities,
and out-went them, and came together
to him, * because they saw his miracles 2. Joh. vi.

Near Beth-saida. which he did on them that were diſeased. * [d] And Jeſus when he came out, Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

Mar. vi. 34. Luke ix. 11. ſaw much people, * and he received them * and was moved with compaſſi-

Mar. vi. 34. on towards them, becauſe they were as ſheep not having a ſhepherd: and he

Luke ix. 11. began to teach them many things, * and ſpake unto them of the kingdom of

Miracle. God, and healed them that had need of healing.

Joh. vi. 3. * And Jeſus went up into a mountain,

4. and there he ſat with his diſciples, and the paſſover, a feaſt of the *Jews*, was

Mar. vi. 35. nigh. * [e] And when the day was now far

Luk. ix. 12. ſpent, * then camé the twelve and ſaid unto him, * *This is a deſert place, and*

Mar. vi. 35. *now the time is far paſſed,* * [f] *ſend the*

Luk. ix. 12. *multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and*

Mar. vi. 36. *lodge,* * *and buy themſelves bread: for they have nothing to eat.*

Joh. vi. 5. * When Jeſus then lift up *his* eyes and ſaw a great company come unto him, he ſaith unto Philip, *Whence ſhall*

6. *we buy bread that theſe may eat?* (and this he ſaid to prove him: for he him-

7. ſelf knew what he would do) Philip anſwered him, *Two hundred penny-worth of bread is not ſufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.*

Mat. xiv. 16. * [g] But Jeſus ſaid unto them, *They need not depart, give ye them to eat.*

Mar. vi. 37. * And they ſay unto him, *ſhall we go and buy two hundred penny-worth of*

38. *bread, and give them to eat?* He ſaith unto them, *How many loaves have ye? go and*

[d] Mat. xiv. 14. Luk. ix. 12.

[e] Mat. xiv. 15. Luk. ix. 12.

[f] Mat. xiv. 15. Mar. vi. 36.

[g] Mar. vi. 37. Luk. ix. 19.

ſee.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.
[h] Mat. xiv. 17. Mar. vi. 38. Luk. ix. 13.
[i] Mat. xiv. 19. Mar. vi. 39. Joh. vi. 10.
[k] Mat. xiv. 19. Luk. ix. 16. Joh. vi 11.
[l] Mar. vi. 41.
[m] Mar. vi. 42. Luk. ix. 17.
[n] Mat. xiv. 20. Mar. vi. 43. Luk. ix. 17.
[o] Mar. vi. 44. Luk. ix. 14. Joh. vi. 10.
[p] Mar. vi. 45, 46.

see. * One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, [h] *There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?* * He said, *bring them hither to me.*

* [i] And he said to his disciples, *Make them sit down in a company by fifties* * *upon the green grass.* * Now there was much grass in the place, * and they did so, and made them all sit down, * and they sat down in ranks by hundreds and by fifties. [k] And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed * them; * and when he had given thanks [*he*] * brake the loaves * [*and*] [l] he distributed to his disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down, * and the two fishes divided he among them all * as much as they would, * [m] and they did all eat, and were filled: * when they were filled, he said unto his disciples, gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost. Therefore [n] they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten, * and of the fishes. * [o] And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, besides women and children. * Then those men when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, *This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.* [p] And straightway Jesus constrained

Near Bethsaida. 8. Joh. vi. 9. 18. Mat. xiv. 14. Luk. ix. 39. Mar. vi. 10. Joh. vi. 15. Luk. ix. 40. Mar. vi. 41. 16. Luk. ix. 11. Joh. vi. 41. Mar. vi. 11. Joh. vi. 41. Mar. vi. 11. Joh. vi. 20. Mat. xiv. Miracle. 12. Joh. vi. 13. 43. Mar. vi. 21. Mat. xiv. 14. Joh. vi. 22. Mat. xiv.

Near Beth-ſaida. ſtrained his diſciples to get *into a ſhip*, and to go before him unto the other ſide, Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.
Mar. vi. 45. Mat. xiv. 22. * unto Bethſaida * while he ſent the
23. multitudes away. And when he had
Joh. vi. 15. ſent the multitudes away, [*He*] * perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himſelf
Mat. xiv. 23. alone * to pray.

SECT. LXVI.

Sea of Galilee. *Jeſus walks upon the Sea, ſtils the Wind, and cures ſeveral ſick.*

Joh. vi. 16. [a] AND, when even was now come, [*Jeſus*'s] diſciples went down
17. unto the ſea, and entred into a ſhip, and went over the ſea towards Capernaum.
Mar. vi. 47. * The ſhip was in the midſt of the ſea,
Joh. vi. 17. and [*Jeſus*] alone on the land, * and it
Mar. vi. 48. was now dark, and Jeſus was not come
Mat. xiv. 24. to them, * and he ſaw them toiling in rowing: [*and*] the ſhip was now in the midſt of the ſea, toſſed with waves,
Joh. vi. 18. [b] for the wind was contrary: * and the ſea aroſe, by reaſon of a great wind that
19. blew. So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs
Mat. xiv. 25. * [c] (a) in the fourth watch of the Night, Jeſus went unto them walking on the
Miracle. 48. Mar. vi. 49. ſea, * [d] and would have paſſed by them.

[a] Mat. xiv. 23. Mar. vi. 47.
[b] Mar. vi. 48.
[c] Mar. vi. 48.
[d] Mat. xiv. 26. Joh. vi. 19.

(a) *Fourth watch of the night*, The laſt quarter of the night, commonly reckoned from cock-crowing to day-breaking.

But

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3. [e]Mar.vi.50. Joh. vi.20.

But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cryed out (for they all saw him, and were troubled.) *[e] But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, *Be of good cheer, it is I, be not affraid.* And Peter answered him, and said, *Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water*; and he said, come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boistrous, he was affraid: and beginning to sink, he cryed, saying, *Lord save me.* And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, *O thou of little faith, wherefore* [f]Mar.vi.51. *didst thou doubt?* [f]and when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

Sea of Galilee. 50. Mar. vi. 27. Mat. xiv. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32.

* Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the Land whither they went. * And they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred. For they considered not *the miracle* of the Loaves, for their heart was hardned. * Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, *Of a truth thou art the Son of God.*

21. Joh. vi. 51. Mar. vi. 52. 33. Mat. xiv.

[s]Mat. xiv. 34.

* [s] And when they had passed over they came into the land of Gennezareth, and drew to the shore. And when they were come out of the ship straightway they knew him. * And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country

53. Mar. vi. Gennezareth. 54.

Gennezareth. try round about, *and ran through that Anno
Mar. vi. 55. whole region round about, and began Ætat. 32.
to [h] carry about in beds those that were Minist. 3.
56. sick, where they heard he was. And [h] Mat. xiv.
wheresoever he entred into villages or 35.
cities, or country, they laid the sick in
the streets, [i] and besought him that they [i] Mar. vi. 56.
might touch, if it were but the border
of his garment: and as many as touched
Miracle.
Mat. xiv. 36. him, * [k] were made perfectly whole.

SECT. LXVII.

A Multitude follow Jesus from the other side of the Lake whom Jesus instructs. Some of his Disciples offended at his Discourses, leave him. Peter in the name of the twelve, assures him of their constancy, &c.

Joh. vi. 22. THE day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one wherein to his disciples were entred, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were
23. gone away alone: (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks.)
24. When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples,

they

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum.
Capernaum seeking for Jesus. And 25. Joh. vi,
when they had found him on the other
side of the sea, they said to him, *Rabbi,*
when camest thou hither? Jesus answered 26.
them and said; *Verily, verily, I say un-*
to you, ye seek me not because ye saw the
miracles, but because ye did eat of the
Loaves, and were filled. Labour not 27.
for the meat that perisheth, but for that
meat which indureth unto everlasting
life, which the son of man shall give un-
to you: for him hath God the Father
sealed.

Then said they unto him, *What shall* 28.
we do, that we might work the works
of God?

Jesus answered and said unto them, 29.
This is the work of God, that ye believe
on him whom he hath sent.

They said therefore unto him, *What* 30.
sign shewest thou then, that we may
see and believe thee? What dost thou
work? Our fathers did eat manna in 31.
the desert; as it is written, " *He gave*
" *them bread from heaven to eat.* [Psal.
lxxviii. 24.]

Then Jesus said unto them, " Verily 32.
" verily, I say unto you, Moses gave
" you not that bread from heaven, but
" my Father giveth you the true bread
" from heaven. For the bread of God 33.
" is he which cometh down from hea-
" ven, and giveth life unto the world.

Then said they unto him, *Lord ever-* 34.
more give us this bread.

Capernaum. And Jesus said unto them, "I am the Anno
Joh. vi. 35. "bread of life: he that cometh to me, Ætat. 32.
"shall never hunger; and he that be- Minist. 3.
36. "lieveth on me, shall never thirst. But
"I said unto you, that ye also have
37. "seen me, and believe not. All that
"the Father giveth me, shall come to
"me; and him that cometh to me, I
38. "will in no wise cast out. For I came
"down from heaven, not to do mine
"own will, but the will of him that
39. "sent me. And this is the Father's
"will which hath sent me, that of all
"which he hath given me, I should
"lose nothing, but should raise it up
40. "again at the last day. And this is the
"will of him that sent me, that every
"one which seeth the son, and believeth
"on him, may have everlasting life: and
"I will raise him up at the last day.
41. The Jews then murmured at him, be-
cause he said, I am the bread which
came down from heaven. And they
42. said, *Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph,*
whose father and mother we know? how
is it then that he saith, I came down
43. *from heaven?* Jesus therefore answered
44. and said unto them, "Murmur not a-
"mong your selves. No man can
"come to me, except the Father which
"hath sent me, draw him: and I will
"raise him up at the last day. It is
45. "written in the prophets, [Isai. liv. 13.
"Jer. xxxi. 34.] *And they shall be*
"*all taught of God.* Every man there-
"fore that hath heard, and hath learn-

"ed

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" ed of the Father, cometh unto me. Capernaum.
" Not that any man hath seen the Father, 46. Joh. vi.
" save he which is of God; he hath
" seen the Father. Verily, verily I say 47.
" unto you, he that believeth on me
" hath everlasting life. I am that bread 48.
" of life. Your fathers did eat manna 49.
" in the wilderness and are dead. This 50.
" is the bread which cometh down from
" heaven, that a man may eat thereof
" and not die. I am the living bread 51.
" which came down from heaven;
" if any man eat of this bread, he shall
" live for ever: and the bread that I
" will give, is my flesh, which I will
" give for the life of the world.

The Jews therefore strove amongst 52. themselves, saying, *How can this man give us his flesh to eat?*

Then Jesus said unto them, " Verily 53.
" verily I say unto you, except ye eat
" the flesh of the son of man, and drink
" his blood, ye have no life in you.
" Whoso eateth my flesh and drinketh 54.
" my blood, hath eternal life, and I
" will raise him up at the last day. For 55.
" my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood
" is drink indeed. He that eateth my 56.
" flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwel-
" leth in me, and I in him. As the li- 57.
" ving Father hath sent me, and I live
" by the Father; so, he that eateth me,
" even he shall live by me. This is that 58.
" bread which came down from hea-
" ven; not as your fathers did eat man-
" na, and are dead: he that eateth

of

Capernaum. " of this bread, ſhall live for ever. Anno
vi. Joh. 59. These things ſaid he in the ſynagogue Ætat. 32.
60. as he taught in Capernaum. Many Miniſt. 3.
therefore of his diſciples when they had
heard this, ſaid, *This is a hard ſaying,*
61. *who can hear it?* When Jeſus knew in
himſelf that his diſciples murmured at
62. it, he ſaid unto them, " Doth this of-
" fend you? *What* and if ye ſhall ſee the
" ſon of man aſcend up where he was be-
63. " fore? It is the ſpirit that quickneth,
" the fleſh profiteth nothing: the words
" that I ſpake unto you, *they* are ſpirit,
64. " and they are life. But there are
" ſome of you that believe not. For
" Jeſus knew from the beginning, who
" they were that believed not, and
" who ſhould betray him. And he ſaid,
65. " Therefore ſaid I unto you, that no
" man can come to me, except it were
" given unto him of my Father.
66. From that *time* many of his diſciples
went back and walked no more with
him.
67. Then ſaid Jeſus unto the twelve, *will*
68. *ye alſo go away?* Then Simon Peter an-
ſwered him, *Lord, to whom ſhall we go?*
69. *Thou haſt the words of eternal life. And*
we believe and are ſure that thou art
Chriſt, the ſon of the living God. Jeſus
70. anſwered them, *Have not I choſen you*
71. *twelve, and one of you is a devil.* He
ſpake of Judas Iſcariot, *the ſon* of Si-
mon: for he it was that ſhould betray
him, being one of the twelve.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

Capernaum.

SECT. LXVIII.

The third Passover after Christ's Baptism.

Jesus's Discourse concerning washing of hands, and the things by which Men are really defiled.

[a] Mat. xv. 1. [a] THEN came together unto [*Jesus*] the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes which came from Jerusalem, and when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled (that is to say with unwashen) hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And *when they come* from the market except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups and pots, brazen vessels and of tables. [b] Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, *Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?* He answered and said unto them, * [c] *Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophecy of you, saying,* [xxix. 13.] *This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.* * [d] *Howbeit, in vain do they worship*

1. Mar. vii.

[b] Mat. xv. 2, 3.

[c] Mar. vii. 6.

7. Mat. xv.

8.

[d] Mat. xv. 9.

7. Mar. vii.

Capernaum. *worſhip me, teaching for doctrines the* Anno
Mar. vi. 8. *commandments of men.* " For laying Ætat. 32.
" aſide the commandments of God, ye Miniſt. 3.
" hold the tradition of men, as the
" waſhing of pots and cups: and many
9. " other ſuch like things ye do. [e] And [e] Mat. xv. 3.
he ſaid unto them, " Full well ye re-
" ject the commandment of God, that
" ye may keep your own tradition.
Mat. xv. 4. " * [f] For God commanded [*by Moſes*] [f] Mar. vii.
" ſaying, Honour thy father and mother: 10.
" and, he that curſeth father or mo-
Mar. vii. 11. " ther, let him die the death. * [g] But [g] Mat. xv. 5.
" ye ſay, if a man ſhall ſay to his fa-
" ther or mother, *It is* (a) Corban,
" that is to ſay, a gift, by whatſoever
" thou mighteſt be profited by me,
Mat. xv. 6. " *he ſhall be free*; * and honour not his
Mar. vii. 12. " father or mother, *he ſhall be free*;
" * and ye ſuffer him no more to do
" ought for his father or mother:
Mat. xv. 6. * [h] Thus have ye made the command- [h] Mar. vii.
" ment of God of none effect by your 13.
Mar. vii. 13. " tradition, * which ye have delivered,
" and many ſuch-like things do ye.
14. [i] And when he had called all the peo- [i] Mat. xv.
ple unto him, he ſaid unto them, *Hear-* 10, 11.
ken unto me every one of you, and un-
15. *derſtand. There is nothing from with-*
out a man, that entring into him can de-

(a) *Corban*, Corban ſignifies a Gift; and is uſed here for a man's Eſtate, devoted to God by his gift. By which they thought themſelves excuſed from relieving their Parents if they had need, pretending their Eſtates were Gods, and they could not diſpoſe of it to any one elſe.

file

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

file him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man. Capernaum.

If any man have ears to hear let him hear. 16. Mar. vii.

And when he was entred into the house from the people, * then came his disciples and said unto him, *Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?* But he answered and said, *Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone, they be blind leaders of the blind; and if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.* [k] Then answered Peter, and said unto him, *Declare unto us this parable.* And Jesus said, "are ye also yet "without understanding? [l] Do ye not "perceive that whatsoever thing from "without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him; because it entreth "not into his heart, but into the belly, "and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? * [m] But those things "which proceed out of the mouth, "come forth from the heart, and they [n] "defile the man. * [n] For from within, "out of the heart of men, proceed evil "thoughts, adulteries, fornications, "murders, thefts, * false witness, "* covetousness, wickedness, deceit, "lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, "pride, foolishness: [o] All these evil "things come from within and defile "the man, * but to eat with unwashen "hands, defileth not a man.

12. Mat. xv.
13.
14.
15.
16.
18. Mar. vii.
19.
19. Mat. xv. / 22. Mar. vii.
23.
20. Mat. xv.

[k] Mar. vii. 17, 18.
[l] Mat. xv. 17.
[m] Mar. vii. 20.
[n] Mat. xv. 19.
[o] Mat. xv. 20.

SECT.

Coaſt of Tyre and Sidon.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

SECT. LXIX.

Jeſus cureth the Daughter of a Canaaniſh Woman, poſſeſſed by an evil Spirit.

Mat. xv. 21. [a] THEN Jeſus went thence, and
Mar. vii. 24. departed into the coaſts of Tyre and Sidon, * and entred into an houſe, and would have no man know it, but he
25. could not be hid. [b] For a certain wo-
Mat. xv. 22. man * of Canaan came out of the ſame
Mar. vii. 25. coaſts * whoſe young daughter had an unclean ſpirit, heard of him and came and
Mat. xv. 22. fell at his feet: *and cryed unto him, ſaying, *Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou ſon of David; my daughter is grievouſly vexed*
Mar. vii. 26. *with a devil.** (The woman was a greek, a ſyrophenician by nation) and ſhe beſought him that he would caſt forth the
Mat. xv. 23. devil out of her daughter. * But he anſwered her not a word. And his diſciples came and beſought him, ſaying, *Send her away, for ſhe crieth after us.*
Mar. vii. 27. * But Jeſus ſaid unto her, *let the children firſt be filled, for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to caſt it unto*
Mat. xv. 24. *dogs.* * *I am not ſent but unto the loſt*
25. *ſheep of the houſe of Iſrael.* Then came ſhe and worſhipped him ſaying, *Lord,*
26. *help me.* But he anſwered and ſaid, *It is not meet to take the childrens bread,*
27. *and caſt it to dogs.* [c] And ſhe ſaid, *Truth* [c] Mar. viii.
Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs, 28.

which

[a] Mar. vii.

[b] Mat. xv. 22.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

which fall from their masters table. Coast of Tyre and Sidon.
Then Jesus answered and said unto her, 28. Mat. xv.
O woman, great is thy faith, be it unto thee even as thou wilt. * *For this saying* 29. Mar. vii.
go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter. And when she was come to Miracle.
her house, she found the devil gone out, 30.
and her daughter laid upon the bed.
* And her daughter was made whole 28. Mat. xv.
from that very hour.

SECT. LXX.

Jesus cureth a dumb Man and several others.

[1] Mat. xv. 29.

[2] AND again [*Jesus*] departing 31. Mar. vii.
from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee
through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis, * and went up into a mountain 29. Mar. xv.
and sat down there. * And they bring 32. Mar. vii.
unto him one that was deaf, and had an
impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.
And he took him aside from the multi- 33.
tude, and put his fingers into his ears,
and he spit, and touched his tongue.
And looking up to heaven, he sighed, 34.
and saith unto him, *Ephphatha*, that is,
be opened. And straightway his ears Miracle.
were opened, and the string of his 35.
tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.
And he charged them that they should 36.
tell no man: but the more he charged
them, so much the more a great deal

they

Capernaum. they publiſhed *it*, and were beyond mea- Anno
Mar. vii. 37. ſure aſtoniſhed, ſaying, *He hath done* Ætat. 32.
all things well: he maketh both the deaf Miniſt. 3.
to hear, and the dumb to ſpeak.

Mat. xv. 30. * And great multitudes came unto
him, having with them thoſe that were
lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many
others; and caſt them down at Jeſus's
Miracle. 31. feet, and he healed them. Inſomuch
that the multitude wondred when they
ſaw the dumb to ſpeak, and the maim-
ed to be whole, and the lame to walk,
and the blind to ſee; and they glorifi-
ed the God of Iſrael.

SECT. LXXI.

Jeſus feeds four thouſand Men with ſeven Loaves and a few Fiſhes.

Mar. viii 1. IN thoſe days the multitude being ve-
ry great, and having nothing to eat,
[a] Jeſus called his diſciples unto him, [a] Mat. xv.
2. and ſaith unto them, "I have compaſ- 32.
" ſion on the multitude, becauſe they
" have now been with me three days,
3. " and have nothing to eat: and if I
" ſend them away faſting to their own
" houſes they will faint by the way:
" for divers of them came from far.

Mat. xv. 33. * [b] And his diſciples ſay unto him, [b] Mar. viii.
Whence ſhould we have ſo much bread in 4, 5.
the wilderneſs as to fill ſo great a mul-
34. *titude?* and Jeſus ſaith unto them, *How*
many loaves have ye? and they ſaid, *ſe-* [c] Mar. viii. 6.
35. *ven, and a few little fiſhes.* [c] And he
commanded

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

commanded the multitude to ſit down Galilee.
on the ground, *[d] and he took the ſe- 6. Mar. viii.
[d] Mat. xv. 36. ven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake,
and gave to his diſciples to ſet before
them: and they did ſet them before
the people. And they had a few ſmall 7.
fiſhes, and he bleſſed, and commanded
[e] Mar. viii. 8, 9. to ſet them alſo before them. *[e] And 37. Mat. xv.
they did all eat, and were filled: and Miracle.
they took up of the broken meat that
was left, ſeven baskets full. And they 38.
that did eat, were four thouſand men
beſide women and children. And he 39.
[f] Mat. xv. 39. ſent away the multitude *[f] and ſtraight- 10. Mar. viii.
way he entred into a ſhip with his diſ-
ciples, and came into the parts of Dal- Dalmanutha.
manutha [*on*] the coaſts of Magdala. 39. Mat. xv.

SECT. LXXII.

The Phariſees and Sadducees tempt Jeſus by asking him a ſign.

[a] Mar. viii. 11. [a] THE Phariſees alſo with the Saddu- 1. Mat. xvi.
cees came, and tempting deſired
[*Jeſus*] that he would ſhew them a
ſign from heaven. He anſwered and
ſaid unto them, "when it is evening, 2.
" ye ſay, *It will be* fair weather, for the
" sky is red. And in the morning, *It* 3.
" *will be* foul weather to day, for the
" sky is red and lowring. O ye hypo-
" crites, ye can diſcern the face of the
" sky, but can ye not diſcern the ſigns
" of the times? * And he ſighed deeply 12. Mar. viii.
[b] Mar. viii. 12. in his ſpirit, and ſaith, *[b] "a wicked 4. Mat. xvi.
" and

Dalmanutha. " and adulterous generation ſeeketh Anno
Mar. viii. 12. " after a ſign. * [c] Verily I ſay unto you, Ætat. 32.
" There ſhall no ſign be given to this Miniſt. 3.
" generation * but the ſign of the pro- [c] Mat. xvi. 4.
" phet Jonas.

SECT. LXXIII.

Galilee. ***Jeſus bids his Diſciples beware of the leven of the Phariſees, and of the Sadducees.***

Mar. viii. 13. [a] AND he left them, and entring in- [a] Mat. xvi. 4
to the ſhip again, departed to
Mat. xvi. 5. the other ſide. * And when his diſci-
ples were come to the other ſide, [b] they [b] Mar. viii.
Mar. viii. 14. had forgotten to take bread, * neither 14.
had they in the ſhip with them more
Mat. xvi. 6. than one loaf. * [c] Then Jeſus ſaid un- [c] Mar. viii.
to them, *Take heed and beware of the* 15.
leven of the Phariſees, and of the Saddu-
Mar. viii. 15. } *cees, *and of the leven of Herod.* * [d] And [d] Mar. viii.
Mat. xvi. 7. } they reaſoned among themſelves, ſaying, 16, 17.
8. *it is becauſe we have no bread:* which
when Jeſus perceived, he ſaid unto them,
Why reaſon ye among your ſelves, O ye
of little faith, becauſe ye have no bread?
Mar. viii. 17. * *perceive ye not yet,* [e] *neither under-* [e] Mat. xvi.
ſtand? have ye your hearts yet har- 9, 10.
18. *dened? having eyes, ſee ye not? having*
ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remem-
19. *ber? When I brake the five loaves among*
five thouſand, how many baskets full of
fragments took ye up? They ſay unto
26. him, *twelve. And when the ſeven a-*

mong

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

mong four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said *seven.* And he said unto them, Galilee.

f Mar. viii. 21.

**f How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?* Then understood they how that he bad *them* not beware of the leven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

{21. Mar. viii. 11. Mat. xvi.

12.

SECT. LXXIV.

Jesus cures a blind Man at Bethsaida. Bethsaida.

AND [*Jesus*] cometh to Bethsaida, and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him. And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the Town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought. And he looked up, and said, *I see men as trees, walking.* After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. And he sent him away to his house, saying, *Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.*

22. Mar. viii.

23.

24.

25.

Miracle.

26.

Territory of Cæsarea Philippi.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

SECT. LXXV.

Jesus goes to the Territory of Cæsarea Philippi, by the way asks his Disciples what People thought of him; tells them he must die, and they suffer many things for his sake.

Mar. viii. 27. [a] AND Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cæsarea
Luk. ix. 18. Philippi: and by the way * it came to pass as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: [b] and he asked
Mat. xvi. 13. them saying, *Whom do men say, that I,*
14. *the son of man, am?* and they said, *Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some*
Luk. ix. 19. *Elias, and others Jeremias,* † *and others say that one of the old prophets is risen*
Mat. xvi. 15. *again.* * He saith unto them, *But whom*
16. *say ye that I am?* And Simon Peter answered and said, *Thou art the Christ,*
17. *the son of the living God.* And Jesus answered and said to him, *Blessed art thou Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my*
18. *Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against*
19. *it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.*

[a] Mat. xvi. 13.

[b] Mat. xvi. 13, 14. Mar. viii. 27, 28, 29. Luk. ix. 18, 19, &c.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

ven. [c] Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

[c] Mar. viii. 30.

[d] From that time forth, began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. *[e] And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him *saying, *Be it far from thee, Lord, this shall not be done unto thee.* *[f] But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, *Get thee behind me, Satan, * thou art an offence to me: * for thou savoureſt not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.*

[d] Mar. viii. 31. Luk. ix. 22. [e] Mat. xvi. 22. [f] Mat. xvi. 23, 24.

Tertitory of Cæsarea Philippi. 20. Mat. xvi. 21.

32. Mar. viii. 22. Mat. xvi. 33. Mar. viii. 23. Mat xvi. 33. Mar. viii.

[g] And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, " whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself and take " up his cross daily and follow me. *[h] For " whosoever will save his life, shall lose " it, but whosoever shall lose his life for " my sake and the Gospels, the same " shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole " world, and lose his own soul? or " what shall a man give in exchange " for his soul? [i] Whosoever therefore " shall be ashamed of me, and of my " words, in this adulterous and sinful " generation, of him also shall the son " of man be ashamed, when he cometh

[g] Luk. ix. 23. [h] Mat. xvi. 25, 26. Luk. ix. 24, 25. [i] Luk. ix. 26.

34. 23. Luk. ix. 35. Mar. viii. 36. 37. 38.

Territory of Cæſarea Philippi. Luk. ix. 26. Mar. viii. 37. Mat. xvi. 27. Mar. ix. 1. Mat. xvi. 28.

" in * his own glory [*and*] in the * glory of his Father, with the holy angels. " * For the ſon of man ſhall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he ſhall reward every man according to his works. * [k] And he ſaid unto them, verily I ſay unto you, that there be ſome of them that ſtand here, which ſhall not taſte of death, till they have ſeen the kingdom of God come with power [*or*] * till they ſee the ſon of man come in his kingdom.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

[k] Mat. xvi. 28. Luk. ix. 27.

SECT. LXXVI.

The Tranſfiguration of Chriſt, his Diſcourſe concerning Elias.

Luk. ix. 28. Mat. xvii. 1. Luk. ix. 28. 29. Mar. ix. 2. Miracle. Mat. xvii. 2. Mar. ix. 3. Mat. xvii. 3. Mar. ix. 4. Luk. ix. 31. 32.

[a] AND it came to paſs about eight days after theſe ſayings, * [b] Jeſus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart * to pray. And as he prayed, the faſhion of his countenance was altered, * and he was tranſfigured before them, * and his face did ſhine as the ſun, [c] and his rayment was white as light, * ſhining exceeding white as ſnow; ſo as no fuller on earth can white them. * And behold there appeared unto them, Moſes and Elias. * [d] And they were talking with Jeſus, * who appeared in glory, and ſpake of his deceaſe, which he ſhould accompliſh at Jeruſalem. But Peter and they that were with him, were

[a] Mat. xvii. 1. Mar. ix. 2. [b] Luk. ix. 28. [c] Luk. ix. 29. 30. [d] Mat. xvii. 3.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3. were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. And it came to pass as they departed from him, [c] Peter said unto Jesus, *Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias:* not knowing what he said, * for they were sore afraid. *[f] While he yet spake [g] behold a bright cloud overshadowed them: *and they feared as they entred into the cloud, *[h] and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, *This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.* And when the disciples heard *it*, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. And Jesus came and touched them, and said, *Arise, and be not afraid.* *[i] And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more save Jesus only with themselves. [k]And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the son of man were risen from the dead. And they kept that saying within themselves, * and they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen, *questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean. *[l] And his disciples asked him, saying, *Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?* *[m] And he answered and told them, *Elias verily cometh first,*

Territory of Cæsarea Philippi.

c Mat. xvii. 4. Mar. ix. 5, 6.

f Luk. ix. 34.

g Mar. ix. 7.

h Luk. ix. 35.

i Mat. xvii. 8. Luk. ix. 36.

k Mat. xvii. 9.

l Mat. ix. 11.

m Mat. xvii. 11, 12.

33. Luk. ix.

6. Mar. ix.

5. Mat. xvii.

34. Luk. ix.

5. Mat. xvii.

6.

7.

8. Mar. ix.

9.

10.

36. Luk. ix.

10. Mar. ix.

10. Mat. xvii.

12. Mar. ix.

Territory of Cæsarea Philippi. *and restoreth all things: and how it is written of the son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.* Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

Mar. ix. 13. *But I say unto you that Elias is indeed*
Mat. xvii. 12. *come* * *already, and they knew him not,*
Mar. ix. 13. * [n] *And they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.*
Mat. xvii. 12. * *Likewise shall also the son of man suf-*
13. *fer of them.* Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

[n] Mat. xvii. 12.

SECT. LXXVII.

Jesus cureth a Boy possessed with a dumb Dæmon, which his Apostles could not cast out.

Luk. ix. 37. AND it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met
Mar. ix. 14. him. * And when he came to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with
15. them. And straightway all the people when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted
16. him. And he asked the Scribes, *What*
Mat. xvii. 14. *question ye with them?* And when they were come to the multitude, * behold
Luk. ix. 38. a man of the company * one of the mul-
Mar. ix. 17. titude * kneeling down to him * cried
Mat. xvii. 14 } Luk. ix. 38. } out, saying, *Master* [*or*] *Lord* * *I have*
Mat. xvii. 15 } Mat. ix. 17. } *brought unto thee my son, which hath a*
Luk. ix. 38. *dumb spirit: I beseech thee look upon my*

Anno. Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

*my son, * have mercy on my son, * for he is my only child. * For he is lunatick and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.* Territory of Cæsarea Philippi.

[a]Mar. ix. 18.

[a] *And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him and he foameth again; * and gnasheth with his teeth and pineth away: * and bruising him hardly departeth from him.* 15. Mat. xvii. 38. Luk. ix. 15. Mat. xvii. 39. Luk. ix. 18. Mar. ix. 39. Luk. ix.

[b] Mar. ix. 18, 19. Luk. ix. 40, 41.

[b] *And I brought him * to thy disciples and besought [them] * that they should cast him out, * and they could not cure him.* 16. Mat. xvii. 40. Luk. ix. 18. Mar. ix. 16. Mat. xvii.

Then Jesus answered and said, *O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring * thy son * hither to me.* 17. 41. Luk. ix. 17. Mat. xvii.

* And they brought him unto him: * and as he was yet a coming, * and he saw him, straightway * the devil threw him down and tare him, * and he fell on the ground and wallowed foaming. And he asked his father, *How long it is ago since this came unto him?* And he said, *Of a child. And oftimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.* Jesus said unto him, *If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.* And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, *Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.* When Jesus saw that the people came running together, [c] he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, *Thou dumb, and deaf spirit,* 20. Mar. ix. 42. Luk. ix. 22. Mar. ix. 20. Mar. ix. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25.

[c]Mat. xvii. 18. Luk. ix. 42.

Miracle.

Territory of Cæsarea Philippi. *spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.* And *the* *spirit* cried, and rent him sore, * [d] and he departed out of him; * and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, *He is dead.* But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose. * And the child was cured from that very hour * and he delivered him again to his father. Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

Mar. ix. 26. Mat. xvii. 18. Mar. ix. 26. 27. Mat. xvii. 18. Luk. ix. 42.

[d] Mar. ix. 26.

SECT. LXXVIII.

The Disciples question Jesus why they could not cast out the dumb Spirit.

Mar. ix. 28. Mat. xvii. 19. 20. 21. Luk. ix. 43.

AND when he was come into the house, [a] * Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, *Why could not we cast him out?* And Jesus said unto them, " Because of your unbelief: for " verily I say unto you, If ye have " faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye " shall say unto this mountain, remove " hence to yonder place, and nothing " shall be impossible to you. [b] Howbeit " this kind goeth not out, but by " prayer and fasting. * And they were " all amazed at the mighty power of " God.

[a] Mar. ix. 28.

[b] Mar. ix. 26.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

SECT. LXXIX.

Jesus goeth into Galilee, *foretells his Death and Resurrection, which his Disciples comprehend not.* Galilee.

BUT while they wondred every one at all things which Jesus did * they departed thence and passed through Galilee; and while they abode in Galilee, he would not that any man should know *it:* for he taught his disciples: * [a] he said unto his disciples, *Let these sayings sink down into your ears:* [b] *for the son of man shall* * *be betrayed into the hands of men:* * [c] *and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.* * [d] But they understood not that saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not. * And they were exceeding sorry, * [e] and they feared to ask him of that saying.

43. Luk. ix. 30. Mar. ix. 22 Mat. xvii. 30. Mar. ix. [a] Mat. xvii. 22. 31. 43. Luk. ix. Mar. ix. 31. [b] Mat. xvii. 22. 44. 22. Mat xvii. Mar. ix. 31. [c] Mat. xvii. 23. 31. Mar. ix. Luk. ix. 44. 45. Luk. ix. [d] Mar. ix. 31. 23. Mat. xvii. 45. Luk. ix. [e] Mar. ix. 32.

SECT. LXXX.

Jesus pays the Tribute Money. Capernaum.

AND when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute *money,* came to Peter, and said, *Doth not your Master pay tribute?* He saith, *yes.* And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, *What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom do the*

24. Mat. xvii. 25.

Capernaum. *the kings of the earth take cuſtom or tribute? of their own children, or of* Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.
Mat. xvii. 26. *ſtrangers?* Peter ſaith unto him, *Of ſtrangers.* Jeſus ſaith unto him, *Then*
27. *are the children free. Notwithſtanding, leſt we ſhould offend them, go thou to the ſea, and caſt an hook, and take up the fiſh that firſt cometh up: and when thou haſt opened his mouth, thou ſhalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.*

SECT. LXXXI.

Jeſus rebukes his Diſciples for their ambition, who contended for priority in the Kingdom of Heaven. Inſtructs them concerning giving Offence to none, and forgiving Injuries. He forbids the moleſting of one that caſt out devils in his name.

Mar. ix. 33. AND being in the houſe, he asked them, *What was it that ye diſputed among your ſelves by the way?* But
34. they held their peace: [a] for by the way they had diſputed among themſelves [a] Luk. ix. 46.
Luk. ix. 47. who ſhould be the greateſt. *And Jeſus perceiving the thought of their
Mar. ix. 35. heart, *he ſat down and called the twelve, and ſaith unto them, *If any man deſire to be firſt, the ſame ſhall be laſt of all, and ſervant of all.*

*At

Ann Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

* At the same time came the disciples Capernaum.
unto Jesus, saying, *Who is the greatest* 1. Mat. xviii.
in the kingdom of heaven? [b] and Jesus 2.
[b] Mar. ix. 36. called a little child unto him, and set
Luk. ix. 47. him in the midst of them, * and when 36. Mar. ix.
he had taken him in his arms, he said
unto them, " Verily I say unto you, 3. Mat. xviii.
" except ye be converted, and become
" as little children, ye shall not enter
" into the kingdom of heaven. Who- 4.
" soever therefore shall humble himself
" as this little child, the same is greatest
[c] Mar. ix. 37. " in the kingdom of heaven. [c] And 5.
Luk. ix. 48. " whoso shall receive one such little
" child in my name receiveth me, * and 37. Mar. ix.
" whosoever shall receive me, receiveth
" not me, but him that sent me; * for 48. Luk. ix.
" he that is least among you all, the
[d] Mar. ix. 42. " same shall be great. [d] * But whoso 6. Mat. xviii.
" shall offend one of these little ones
" which believe in me, it were better
" for him that a millstone were hanged
" about his neck, and *that* he were
" drowned in the depth of the sea.
" Wo unto the world because of offen- 7.
" ces: for it must needs be that offen-
" ces come: but wo to that man by
[e] Mar. ix. 43. " whom the offence cometh. [e] Where- 8.
" fore if thy hand or thy foot offend
" thee, cut them off, and cast them
" from thee: it is better for thee to en-
" ter into life halt or maimed, rather
" than having two hands or two feet,
[f] Mat. xviii. 8. " [f] * to go into hell, into the fire that 43. Mar. ix.
" never shall be quenched: where their 44.
" worm dieth not, and the fire is not
quenched.

Capernaum. " quenched. *And if thy foot offend Anno
Mar. ix. 45. " thee, cut it off: it is better for thee Ætat. 32.
" to enter halt into life, than having Minist. 3.
" two feet, to be cast into hell, into
" the fire that never shall be quenched
46. " where their worm dieth not, and the
Mat. xviii. 9. " fire is not quenched. *[g] And if thine [g] Mar. ix. 47.
" eye offend thee, pluck it out and cast
Mar. ix. 47. " it from thee: *[h] it is better for thee [h] Mat. xviii.
" to enter into the kingdom of God 9.
" with one eye, than having two eyes,
48. " to be cast into hell fire: where their
" worm dieth not, and their fire is not
" quenched.
49. " For every one shall be salted with
" fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted
50. " with salt. Salt *is* good: but if the
" salt have lost his saltness, wherewith
" will you season it? Have salt in your
" selves, and have peace one with a-
" nother.
Mat. xviii. 10. " *Take heed that ye despise not
" one of these little ones; for I say un-
" to you, that in heaven their angels
" do always behold the face of my Fa-
11. " ther which is in heaven. For the son
" of man is come to save that which
12. " was lost. How think ye? if a man
" have an hundred sheep, and one of
" them be gone astray, doth he not
" leave the ninety and nine, and goeth
" into the mountains, and seeketh that
13. " which is gone astray? And if so be
" that he find it, verily I say unto you,
" he rejoyceth more at that *sheep*, than
" of the ninety and nine which went

" not

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" not astray. Even so it is not the Capernaum.
" will of your Father which is in hea- 14. Mat. xviii.
" ven, that one of these little ones
" should perish.
" Moreover if thy Brother shall tres- 15.
" pass against thee, go and tell him his
" fault between thee and him alone.
" If he shall hear thee, thou hast gain-
" ed thy brother. But if he will not 16.
" hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or
" two more, that in the mouth of two
" or three witnesses every word may be
" established. And if he shall neglect 17.
" to hear them, tell it unto the church:
" but if he neglect to hear the church,
" let him be unto thee as an heathen
" man and a publican. Verily I say un- 18.
" to you, whatsoever ye shall bind on
" earth, shall be bound in heaven: and
" whatsoever ye shall loose on earth,
" shall be loosed in heaven.
" Again I say unto you, that if two 19.
" of you shall agree on earth as touch-
" ing any thing that they shall ask, it
" shall be done for them of my Father
" which is in heaven. For where two 20.
" or three are gathered together in my
" name, there am I in the midst of
" them.
" Then came Peter to him, and said, 21.
" Lord, how oft shall my brother sin
" against me, and I forgive him? till
" seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I 22.
" say not to thee, until seven times;
" but, until seventy times seven.

" There-

Capernaum. Anno
Mat. xviii. 23. " Therefore is the kingdom of hea- Ætat. 32.
" ven likened to a certain king which Minist. 3.
" would take account of his servants.
24. " And when he had begun to reckon,
" one was brought to him which ought
25. " him ten thousand talents. But for-
" as much as he had not to pay, his
" Lord commanded him to be sold,
" and his wife and children and all that
" he had, and payment to be made.
26. " The servant therefore fell down and
" worshipped him, saying, Lord have
" patience with me, and I will pay
27. " thee all. Then the Lord of that ser-
" vant was moved with compassion, and
" loosed him and forgave him the debt.
28. " But the same servant went out, and
" found one of his fellow servants,
" which ought him an hundred pence:
" and he laid hands on him, and took
" him by the throat, saying, pay me
29. " that thou owest. And his fellow ser-
" vant fell down at his feet, and be-
" sought him, saying, Have patience
" with me, and I will pay thee all.
30. " And he would not, but went and
" cast him into prison, till he should
" pay the debt.
31. " So when his fellow servants saw
" what was done, they were very sorry,
" and came and told their Lord all that
32. " was done. Then his Lord, after
" that he had called him, said unto
" him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave
" thee all that debt because thou desi-
33. " redst me. Shouldest thou not also have

" had

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" had compassion on thy fellow servant, Capernaum.
" even as I had pity on thee? And his 34. Mat. xviii.
" Lord was wrath, and deliver'd him
" to the tormentors till he should pay
" all that was due to him.
" So likewise shall my heavenly fa- 35.
" ther do also unto you, if ye from
" your hearts forgive not every one his
" brother their trespasses.

[a] Luke ix. 49, 50.

* [a] And John answered him saying, 38. Mar. ix.
Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us;
and we forbad him, because he followeth not us. But Jesus said, " forbid him 39.
" not: for there is no man which shall
" do a miracle in my name, that can
" lightly speak evil of me. For he 40.
" that is not against us, is on our part.
" For whosoever shall give you a cup 41.
" of water to drink in my name, be-
" cause ye belong to Christ, verily I
" say unto you, he shall not lose his
" reward.

SECT. LXXXII.

Christ going to Jerusalem. The Samaritans by the way refuse to entertain him, &c. Galilee.

AFter these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him. [1] John vii.

Galilee. Now the Jews feaſt of tabernacles Anno
John vii. 2. was at hand. His brethren therefore Ætat. 32.
3. ſaid unto him, *Depart hence, and go in-* Miniſt. 3.
to Judea, that thy diſciples alſo may ſee
4. *the works that thou doeſt. For there is*
no man that doeth any thing in ſecret,
and he himſelf ſeeketh to be known open-
ly. If thou do theſe things, ſhew thy
ſelf to the world.
5. For neither did his brethren believe
6. in him. Then Jeſus ſaid unto them,
" My time is not yet come: but your
7. " time is alway ready. The world
" cannot hate you; but me it hateth,
" becauſe I teſtifie of it, that the works
8. " thereof are evil. Go ye up unto this
" feaſt: I go not up yet unto this feaſt,
" for my time is not yet full come.
9. When he had ſaid theſe words to them,
10. he abode ſtill in Galilee. But when
his brethren were gone up, then went
he alſo up unto the feaſt; not openly,
Luke ix. 51. but as it were in ſecret. * And it came
to paſs, when the time was come that
he ſhould be received up, he ſtedfaſtly
52. ſet his face to go to Jeruſalem, and ſent
meſſengers before his face: and they
Village of the Samaritans. went and entred into a Village of the
Samaritans to make ready for him. And
53. they did not receive him, becauſe his
face was as tho' he would go to Jeru-
54. ſalem. And when his diſciples James
and John ſaw this, they ſaid, *Lord,*
wilt thou that we command fire to come
down from heaven, and conſume them,
55. *even as Elias did?* But he turned and
rebuked

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

rebuked them, and said, *Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.* For the *son of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them.* And they went to another village. Village of the Samaritans. 56. Luke ix.

And it came to pass, that as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, *Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.* And Jesus said unto him, *Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests, but the son of man hath not where to lay his head.* 57. 58.

And he said to another, *follow me:* But he said, *Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.* Jesus said unto him, *Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.* 59. 60.

And another also said, *Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewel which are at home at my house.* And Jesus said unto him, *No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.* 61. 62.

SECT. LXXXIII.

Jesus sendeth seventy Disciples by two and two into those places thro' which he design'd to pass.

AFter these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place whither he himself 1. Luke x.

Village of the Samaritans. Luke x.

would come. Therefore ſaid he unto them, "The harveſt truly is great, but
2. "the labourers are few: pray ye there-
"fore the Lord of the harveſt, that he
"would ſend forth labourers into his
3. "harveſt. Go your ways: Behold, I
"ſend you forth as lambs among
4. "wolves. Carry neither purſe, nor ſcrip,
"nor ſhoes; and ſalute no man by the
5. "way. And into whatſoever houſe ye
"enter, firſt ſay, peace be to this houſe.
6. "And if the ſon of peace be there,
"your peace ſhall reſt upon it; if not
7. "it ſhall turn to you again. And in
"the ſame houſe remain eating and
"drinking ſuch things as they give:
"for the labourer is worthy of his hire.
8. "Go not from houſe to houſe. And
"into whatſoever city ye enter, and
"they receive you, eat ſuch things
9. "as are ſet before you. And heal the
"ſick that are therein, and ſay to them,
"The kingdom of God is come nigh
10. "unto you. But into whatſoever city
"ye enter, and they receive you not,
"go your ways out into the ſtreets of
11. "the ſame, and ſay, Even the very duſt
"of the city which cleaveth on us, we
"do wipe off againſt you; notwith-
"ſtanding be ſure of this, that the
"kingdom of God is come nigh unto
12. "you. But I ſay unto you, that it
"ſhall be more tolerable in that day
"for Sodom, than for that city.
13. "Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto
"thee Bethſaida; for if the mighty

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

"works

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" works had been done in Tyre and
" Sidon, which have been done in you,
" they had a great while ago repented,
" sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But 14.
" it shall be more tolerable for Tyre
" and Sidon at the judgment, than
" for you. And thou Capernaum, 15.
" which art exalted to heaven, shall
" be thrust down to hell. He that 16.
" heareth you, heareth me; and he
" that despiseth you, despiseth me;
" and he that despiseth me, despiseth
" him that sent me.

A Village of the Samaritans Luke x.

SECT. LXXXIV.

The Jews seek for Jesus at Jerusalem. Temple.
About the middle of the Feast he teaches in the Temple. The Jews endeavour to lay Hands on him.

THen the Jews sought [Jesus] at 11. John vii.
the feast, and said, *where is he?*
And there was much murmuring among 12.
the People concerning him; for some
said, *He is a good man*; others said,
nay, but he deceiveth the people. How- 13.
beit no man spake openly of him, for
fear of the Jews.

Now about the midst of the feast, 14.
Jesus went up into the temple, and
taught. And the Jews marvelled, say- 15.
ing, *How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?* Jesus answered 16.
them, and said, " My doctrine is not
" mine, but his that sent me. If any 17.

The Temple. John vii.

" man will do his will, he ſhall know
" of the doctrine, whether it be of
" God, or *whether* I ſpeak of my ſelf.
18. " He that ſpeaketh of himſelf, ſeeketh
" his own glory; but he that ſeeketh
" his glory that ſent him, the ſame is
" true, and no unrighteouſneſs is in
19. " him. Did not Moſes give you the
" law, and yet none of you keepeth
" the law? Why go ye about to kill
" me?
20. The people anſwered and ſaid, *Thou*
haſt a devil; *who goeth about to kill*
21. *thee?* Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto
them, " I have done one work, and ye all
22. " marvel. Moſes therefore gave unto
" you circumciſion, (not becauſe it is
" of Moſes, but of the fathers) and ye
" on the ſabbath day circumciſe a man.
23. " If a man on the ſabbath day re-
" ceive circumciſion, that the law of
" Moſes ſhould not be broken; are ye
" angry at me, becauſe I have made a
" man every whit whole on the ſabbath
" day?
24. " Judge not according to the ap-
" pearance, but judge righteous judg-
" ment.
25. Then ſaid ſome of them of Jeruſa-
lem, *Is not this he whom they ſeek to*
26. *kill? But lo he ſpeaketh boldly, and they*
ſay nothing unto him: Do the rulers
know indeed that this is the very Chriſt?
27 *Howbeit we know this man whence he is;*
but when Chriſt cometh, no man knoweth
whence he is.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

Then

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, "Ye both know me, "and ye know whence I am: and I "am not come of my self, but he that "sent me is true, whom ye know not. "But I know him, for I am from him; "and he hath sent me. Then they sought to take him: But no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. The Temple. 28. John vii. 28. 29. 30.

And many of the people believ'd on him, and said, *When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than those which this man hath done?* 31.

The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief Priests sent officers to take him. 32.

Then said Jesus unto them, *Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go to him that sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.* 33. 34.

Then said the Jews among themselves, *Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? Will he go to the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me; and where I am, thither ye cannot come?* 35. 36.

The Temple.

Anno Ætat 32. Minist. 3.

SECT. LXXXV.

Jesus speaks again in the Temple the last day of the Feast. Some take him for a Prophet; others not, because he came out of Galilee. They seek again to lay hold on him.

John vii. 37. IN the last day, that great day of the
feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying,
If any man thirst, let him come unto me
38. *and drink. He that believeth on me,*
as the Scripture hath said, out of his bel-
39. *ly shall flow rivers of living water.* (But
this spake he of the Spirit, which they
that believe should receive, for the Ho-
ly Ghost was not yet given, because
40. that Jesus was not yet glorified) Many
of the people therefore, when they
heard this saying, said, *Of a truth this*
41. *is the prophet.* Others said, *This is*
the Christ. But some said, *Shall Christ*
42. *come out of Galilee? Hath not the Scrip-*
ture said, that Christ cometh of the seed
of David, and out of the town of Bethle-
43. *hem, where David was?* So there was
a division among the people because
44. of him. And some of them would
have taken him; but no man laid hands
on him.

45. Then came Officers to the chief
priests and Pharisees; and they said un-
to them, *Why have ye not brought him?*
46. The officers answer'd, *Never man spake*
like this man. Then answered them
the

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

the Pharisees, *Are ye also deceived?* The Temple. Joh. vii.
Have any of the Rulers or of the Pha- 47.
risees believed on him? But this people 48.
who knoweth not the Law are cursed. 49.
Nicodemus saith unto them, (He that 50.
came to Jesus by night, being one of
them) *Doth our Law judge any man be-* 51.
fore it hear him, and know what he do-
eth? They answered and said unto him, 52.
Art thou also of Galilee? search and
look; for out of Galilee ariseth no Pro-
phet. And every man went to his own 53.
house.

SECT. LXXXVI.

The Judgment of Christ concerning an Adulteress.

JESUS went unto the mount of 1. Joh. viii.
Olives: And early in the morning 2.
he came again into the temple, and all
the people came unto him; and he sat
down, and taught them.

And the Scribes and Pharisees brought 3.
unto him a woman taken in Adultery;
and when they had set her in the mids,
They say unto him, *Master, this wo-* 4.
man was taken in adultery, in the very
act. Now Moses in the Law command- 5.
ed us, that such should be stoned; but
what sayest thou? This they said, tempt- 6.
ing him, that they might have to ac-
cuse him. But Jesus stooped down,
and with his finger wrote on the ground
as tho' he heard them not.

So

The Temple. Joh. viii.

So when they continued asking him, Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.
7. he lift up himself, and said unto them, *He that is without sin amongst you, let*
8. *him first cast a stone at her.* And again he stooped down, and wrote on the
9. ground. And they which heard *it*, being convicted in their own conscience, went out one by one; beginning at the eldest, even unto the last; and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.
10. When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, *Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?*
11. She said, *no man, Lord:* And Jesus said unto her, *Neither do I condemn thee: Go, and sin no more.*

SECT. LXXXVII.

Jesus's Discourse concerning himself, and the depravity of the Jews of that Age.

12. THEN spake Jesus again unto them saying, *I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.*
13. The Pharisees therefore said unto him, *Thou beareſt record of thy self; thy record is not true.*
14. Jesus answered and said unto them, " Tho' I bear record of my self, *yet* my

" record

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" record is true: for I know whence I The Temple.
" came, and whither I go; but ye can- 14. Joh. viii.
" not tell whence I come, and whither
" I go. Ye judge after the flesh, I judge 15.
" no man. And yet if I judge, my 16.
" judgment is true: for I am not alone
" but I and the Father that sent me.
" It is also written in your Law, that the 17.
" testimony of two men is true. I am 18.
" one that bear witness of my self, and
" the Father that sent me beareth wit-
" ness of me.

Then said they unto him, *Where is* 19. *thy Father.*

Jesus answered, " Ye neither know
" me, nor my Father: if ye had known
" me, ye should have known my Fa-
" ther also.

These words spake he in the treasury, 20. as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

Then said Jesus again unto them, " I 21.
" go my way, and ye shall seek me,
" and shall dye in your sins: whither
" I go ye cannot come.

Then said the Jews, *Will he kill* 22. *himself? because he saith, whither I go, ye cannot come.*

And he said unto them, " ye are from 23.
" beneath, I am from above: ye are of
" this world, I am not of this world.
" I said therefore unto you, that ye shall 24.
" die in your sins; for if ye believe not
" that I am *he*, ye shall die in your
" sins.

Then

The Temple. Joh. viii. 25. Then ſaid they unto him, *Who art thou?* Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

And Jeſus ſaid unto them, " even *the* " *ſame* that I ſaid unto you from the
26. " beginning. I have many things to " ſay, and to judge of you: but he " that ſent me, is true; and I ſpeak to " the world thoſe things which I have " heard of him.
27. They underſtood not that he ſpake to them of the Father.
28. " Then ſaid Jeſus unto them, " when " ye have lift up the ſon of man, then " ſhall ye know that I am he, and *that* " I do nothing of my ſelf; but as my " Father hath taught me, I ſpeak theſe
29. " things. And he that ſent me is with " me: the Father hath not left me a- " lone: for I do always thoſe things " that pleaſe him.
30. As he ſpake theſe words, many be-
31. lieved on him. Then ſaid Jeſus to thoſe Jews that believed on him:
" If ye continue in my word, *then*
32. " are ye my diſciples indeed; and ye " ſhall know the truth, and the truth " ſhall make you free.
33. They anſwered him, *We be Abraham's ſeed, and were never in bondage to any man; how ſayeſt thou, ye ſhall be made free?*
34. Jeſus anſwered them, " Verily, veri- " ly I ſay unto you, whoſoever com-
35. " mitteth ſin, is the ſervant of ſin. And " the ſervant abideth not in the houſe " for ever; but the ſon abideth ever.

If

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" If the son therefore shall make you The Temple.
" free, ye shall be free indeed. I know 36. Joh. viii.
" that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye 37.
" seek to kill me, because my word
" hath no place in you. I speak that 38.
" which I have seen with my Father.
" And ye do that which ye have seen
" with your father.

They answered and said unto him, 39.
Abraham is our father.

Jesus saith unto them, " If ye were
" Abraham's children, ye would do
" the works of Abraham. But now 40.
" ye seek to kill me, a man that hath
" told you the truth which I have heard
" of God: this did not Abraham. Ye 41.
" do the deeds of your father.

Then said they unto him, *We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.*

Jesus said unto them, " If God were 42.
" your Father, ye would love me: for
" I proceeded forth, and came from
" God; neither came I of my self,
" but he sent me. Why do ye not 43.
" understand my speech? even because
" ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of 44.
" *your* father the Devil, and the lusts of
" your father ye will do: he was a
" murderer from the beginning, and
" abode not in the truth, because there
" is no truth in him. When he speak-
" eth a lye, he speaketh of his own:
" for he is a liar, and the father of it.
" And because I tell you the truth, ye 45.
" believe me not. Which of you con- 46.

" vinceth

The Temple. " vinceth me of ſin? And if I ſay the Anno
Joh. viii. 46. " truth, why do ye not believe me? Ætat. 32.
47. " He that is of God, heareth God's Miniſt. 3.
" words: ye therefore hear *them* not,
" becauſe ye are not of God.
48. Then anſwered the Jews, and ſaid unto him, *Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and haſt a devil.*
49. Jeſus anſwered, " I have not a de-
" vil, but I honour my Father, and ye
50. " do diſhonour me. And I ſeek not
" mine own glory: there is one that
51. " ſeeketh and judgeth. Verily, veri-
" ly I ſay unto you, if a man keep
" my ſayings he ſhall never ſee death.
52. Then ſaid the Jews unto him, *Now we know that thou haſt a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou ſayeſt, if a man keep my ſaying, he*
53. *ſhall never taſte of death. Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makeſt thou thy ſelf?*
54. Jeſus anſwered, " If I honour my
" ſelf, my honour is nothing: it is my
" Father that honoureth me, of whom
55. " ye ſay, that he is your God: yet ye
" have not known him; but I know
" him: and if I ſhould ſay I know him
" not, I ſhall be a liar like unto you:
" but I know him, and keep his ſaying.
56. " Your Father Abraham rejoiced to ſee
" my day, and he ſaw it and was glad.
57. Then ſaid the Jews unto him, *Thou art not yet fifty years old, and haſt thou ſeen Abraham?*

Jeſus

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

Jeſus ſaid unto them, "Verily verily "I ſay unto you, Before Abraham was, "I am. The Temple. 58. Joh. viii.

Then took they up ſtones to caſt at him: but Jeſus hid himſelf, and went out of the temple, going through the midſt of them, and ſo paſſed by. 59.

SECT. LXXXVIII.

Jeſus cures a Man that was born Blind, and has ſeveral Diſcourſes concerning the cauſe of his blindneſs and his cure, which having perform'd on the Sabbath-Day, fills the Jews with rage againſt him. Jeruſalem.

AND as Jeſus paſſed by, he ſaw a man which was blind from his birth. 1. Joh. ix.

And his diſciples asked him, ſaying, *Maſter, who did ſin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?* Jeſus anſwered, "Neither hath this man ſin- "ned, nor his parents: but that the "works of God ſhould be made mani- "feſt in him. I muſt work the works "of him that ſent me, while it is day: "the night cometh when no man can "work. As long as I am in the world, "I am the light of the world. 2. 3. 4. 5.

When he had thus ſpoken, he ſpat on the ground, and made clay of the ſpittle; and he annointed the eyes of 6.

the

Jeruſalem. Joh. ix. Miracle.

the blind man with the clay, and he
7. ſaid unto him, *Go waſh in the* (a) *pool of Siloam* (which is by interpretation, ſent.) He went his way therefore, and
8. waſhed, and came ſeeing. The neighbours therefore, and they which before had ſeen him that he was blind, ſaid
9. *Is not this he that ſat and begged?* Some ſaid *This is he:* others ſaid *he is like*
10. *him:* but he ſaid, I am he. Therefore ſaid they unto him, *How were thine*
11. *eyes opened?* He anſwered and ſaid, *A man that is called Jeſus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and ſaid unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and waſh: and I went and waſhed, and I received ſight.*
12. Then ſaid they unto him, *Where is he?*
13. He ſaid, *I know not.* They brought to the Phariſees him that aforetime was blind.
14. And it was the ſabbath day when Jeſus made the clay, and opened his eyes.
15. Then again the Phariſees alſo asked him how he had received his ſight. He ſaid unto them, *He put clay upon mine*
16. *eyes, and I waſhed and do ſee.* Therefore ſaid ſome of the Phariſees, *This man is not of God, becauſe he keepeth not the ſabbath-day.* Others ſaid, *How can a man that is a ſinner, do ſuch mi-*

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

(a) *Pool of Siloam* Was a Pool that ſtood near the ſheep market in Jeruſalem wherein the Prieſts uſed to waſh the ſheep that were for the ſacrifice; it received its water from the fountain of Siloe at the foot of mount Sion; it is called alſo the pool of Bethesda.

racles?

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

racles? and there was a diviſion among them. Jeruſalem. Joh. ix.

They ſay unto the blind Man again, *What ſayeſt thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes?* He ſaid, *he is a prophet.*

But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his ſight, until they call'd the Parents of him that had receiv'd his ſight. And they asked them, ſaying, *Is this your Son, who ye ſay was born blind? how then doth he now ſee?* His Parents anſwered them and ſaid, *We know that this is our ſon, and that he was born blind: But by what means he now ſeeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes we know not: he is of age; ask him, he ſhall ſpeak for himſelf.* Theſe words ſpake his Parents, becauſe they feared the Jews: For the Jews had agreed already, that if any Man did confeſs that he was Chriſt, he ſhould be put out of the Synagogue. Therefore ſaid his Parents, *He is of age, ask him.*

18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23.

Then again call'd they the Man that was blind, and ſaid unto him, *Give God the praiſe. We know that this man is a ſinner.* He anſwered and ſaid, *Whether he be a ſinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I ſee.* Then ſaid they to him again, *What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?* He anſwer'd them, *I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore ſhould you hear it again?*

24. 25. 25. 27.

Jeruſalem. Joh. ix. *will ye alſo be his diſciples?* Then they reviled him, and ſaid, *Thou art his diſciple; but we are Moſes diſciples. We know that God ſpake unto Moſes: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.* The Man anſwered and ſaid unto them, *Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not ſinners: but if any Man be a worſhipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.* They anſwered and ſaid unto him, *Thou waſt altogether born in ſins, and doſt thou teach us?* And they caſt him out.

Jeſus heard that they had caſt him out; and when he found him, he ſaid unto him, *Doſt thou believe on the Son of God?* He anſwered and ſaid, *Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?* And Jeſus ſaid unto him, *Thou haſt both ſeen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.* And he ſaid, *Lord, I believe.* And he worſhipped him.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

Jerusalem.

SECT. LXXXIX.

Jesus shews that he is the true Shepherd, and that he must lay down his Life for his Sheep. The Jews are divided in their Opinion concerning him.

AND Jesus said, For *judgment I am come into this world: that they which see not, might see; and that they which see, might be made blind.* And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these Words, and said unto him, *Are we blind also?* Jesus said unto them, "If ye were blind, ye "should have no Sin: but now ye say "we see; therefore that Sin remain- "eth. Verily, verily I say unto you, "He that entreth not by the Door in- "to the Sheepfold, but climbeth up "some other way, the same is a Thief "and a Robber. But he that entreth "in by the Door, is the Shepherd of "the Sheep. To him the Porter open- "eth; and the Sheep hear his voice; "and he calleth his own Sheep by "name, and leadeth them out. And "when he putteth forth his own Sheep, "he goeth before them, and the Sheep "follow him: for they know his voice. "And a Stranger will they not follow, "but will flee from him: for they "know not the voice of Strangers.

39. Joh. ix. 40. 41. 1. Joh. x. 2. 3. 4. 5.

Jeruſalem. Joh. x.

This Parable ſpake Jeſus unto them: Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.
6. but they underſtood not what things they were which he ſpake unto them.
7. Then ſaid Jeſus unto them again.
" Verily, verily I ſay unto you, I am
8. " the Door of the Sheep. All that
" ever came before me, are Thieves
" and Robbers: but the Sheep did not
9. " hear them. I am the Door, by me
" if any Man enter in, he ſhall be ſa-
" ved, and ſhall go in and out, and
10. " find paſture. The Thief cometh not
" but for to ſteal, and to kill, and to
" deſtroy: I am come that they might
" have Life, and that they might have
11. " it more abundantly. I am the good
" Shepherd: the good Shepherd giveth
12. " his Life for the Sheep. But he that
" is an Hireling and not the Shepherd,
" whoſe own the Sheep are not, ſeeth
" the Wolf coming, and leaveth the
" Sheep, and fleeth: and the Wolf
" catcheth them, and ſcattereth the
13. " Sheep. The Hireling fleeth, becauſe
" he is an Hireling, and careth not for
14. " the Sheep. I am the good Shepherd,
" and know my Sheep, and am known
15. " of mine. As the Father knoweth
" me, even ſo know I the Father, and
" I lay down my Life for the Sheep.
16. " And other Sheep I have, which
" are not of this fold: them alſo I
" muſt bring, and they ſhall hear my
" voice; there ſhall be one Fold, and
" one Shepherd. Therefore doth my
17. " Father love me, becauſe I lay down

my

Anno Ætat. 22. Miniſt. 3.

" my Life, that I might take it again. Jeruſalem.
" No man taketh it from me, but I lay 18. Joh. x.
" it down of my ſelf: I have power to
" lay it down, and I have power to
" take it again. This Commandment
" have I received of my Father.

There was a diviſion therefore again 19.
among the Jews for theſe ſayings. And
many of them ſaid, *He hath a devil and is mad; why hear ye him?* Others ſaid, 20.
Theſe are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

SECT. XC.

The Seventy Diſciples return to Jeſus. His Diſcourſe with them.

AND the ſeventy returned again 17. Luk. x.
with joy, ſaying, *Lord, even the devils are ſubject unto us through thy name.* And [*Jeſus*] ſaid unto them, 18.
" I beheld Satan as lightning, fall from
" Heaven. Behold I give unto you 19.
" power to tread on Serpents and Scor-
" pions, and over all the power of the
" Enemy; and nothing ſhall by any
" means hurt you. Notwithſtanding 20.
" in this rejoice not, that the Spirits
" are ſubject to you: but rather re-
" joice becauſe your names are written
" in heaven.

In that Hour Jeſus rejoiced in Spirit, 21.
and ſaid, " I thank thee, O Father,

Jeruſalem. Luk. x.

" Lord of Heaven and Earth, that thou
" haſt hid theſe things from the wiſe
" and prudent, and haſt revealed them
" unto babes: even ſo, Father, for ſo
" it ſeemed good in thy ſight.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

22. " All things are deliver'd to me of
" my Father: and no Man knoweth
" who the Son is, but the Father; and
" who the Father is, but the Son, and
" he to whom the Son will reveal
" him.

23. And he turn'd him unto his Diſciples, and ſaid privately, " Bleſſed are the
" Eyes which ſee the things that ye
24. " ſee. For I tell you, that many Pro-
" phets and Kings have deſired to ſee
" thoſe things which ye ſee, and have
" not ſeen them; and to hear thoſe
" things which ye hear, and have not
" heard them.

SECT. XCI.

Jeſus's Anſwer to a Lawyer, who inquired of him the way to obtain eternal Life. Shews who is our Neighbour.

25. AND behold, a certain Lawyer ſtood up, and tempted [*Jeſus*,] ſaying, *Maſter, what ſhall I do to inherit eternal*
26. *life?* He ſaid unto him, *What is written in the Law? how readeſt thou?* And he
27. anſwering ſaid, *Thou ſhalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all*

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thy self. And he said unto him, *Thou hast answered right: this do and thou shalt live.* But he willing to justifie himself, said unto Jesus, *And who is my neighbour?* And Jesus answering, said, " A certain Man went down " from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell " among thieves, which stripped him " of his raiment, and wounded *him*, " and departed, leaving him half dead. " And by chance there came down a " certain Priest that way; and when he " saw him, he passed by on the other " side. And likewise a Levite, when " he was at the place, came, and look- " ed *on him*, and passed by on the " other side. But a certain Samaritan, " as he journied, came where he was: " and when he saw him, he had com- " passion *on him*, and went to him, " and bound up his wounds, pouring " in oil and wine, and set him on his " own beast, and brought him to an " Inn, and took care of him. And on " the morrow when he departed, he " took out two pence, and gave them " to the host, and said unto him, Take " care of him; and whatsoever thou " spendest more, when I come again, " I will repay thee. Which now of " these three, thinkest thou, was neigh- " bour to him that fell among the " thieves? And he said, he that shew- " ed mercy on him. Then said Jesus

Jerusalem. Luk. x.

28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37

Jeruſalem. Luk. x. " unto him, Go, and do thou like- " wiſe. Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

SECT. XCII.

Jeſus is entertained by Martha and Mary.

Bethany. Luk. x.

38. NOW it came to paſs, as they went, that [*Jeſus*] entred into a certain Village, and a certain Woman named *Martha*, received him into her
39. houſe. And ſhe had a Siſter called *Ma-ry*, which alſo ſat at Jeſus feet, and
40. heard his word. But *Martha* was cumbred about much ſerving, and came to him, and ſaid, *Lord, doſt thou not care that my ſiſter hath left me to ſerve alone? bid her therefore that ſhe help me.*
41. And Jeſus anſwered, and ſaid unto her, *Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and*
42. *troubled about many things. But one thing is needful. And Mary hath choſen that good part, which ſhall not be taken away from her.*

SECT. XCIII.

One of Jeſus's Diſciples asketh him to teach him to pray: His Anſwer and Diſcourſe about Prayer.

Luk. xi. 1. AND it came to paſs, that as [*Jeſus*] was praying in a certain place, when he ceaſed, one of his Diſciples

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

ciples said unto him, *Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.* Bethany. Luk. xi.

And he said unto them, " When ye 2.
" pray say, Our Father which art in
" heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy
" Kingdom come. Thy will be done,
" as in heaven, so in earth. Give us 3.
" day by day our daily bread. And for- 4.
" give us our sins; for we also forgive
" every one that is indebted to us. And
" lead us not into temptation, but de-
" liver us from evil.

And he said unto them, " Which of 5.
" you shall have a friend, and shall go
" unto him at mid-night, and say un-
" to him, Friend, lend me three loaves; 6.
" a friend of mine in his journey is come
" to me, and I have nothing to set be-
" fore him: And he from within shall 7.
" answer and say, Trouble me not:
" the door is now shut, and my Chil-
" dren are with me in bed; I cannot
" rise and give thee.

" I say unto you, Though he will 8.
" not rise and give him because he is
" his friend; yet because of his impor-
" tunity, he will rise and give him as
" many as he needeth. And I say un- 9.
" to you, Ask, and it shall be given
" you: seek and ye shall find: knock
" and it shall be open'd unto you. For 10.
" every one that asketh, receiveth: and
" he that seeketh findeth: and to him
" that knocketh it shall be opened. If 11.
" a son shall ask bread of any of you
" that is a father, will he give him a
" stone?

Bethany. Luk. xi. 12. " ſtone? or if he ask a fiſh, will he Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.
" for a fiſh give him a Serpent? or if he
" ſhall ask an egg, will he offer him
13. " a ſcorpion? If ye then being evil,
" know how to give good gifts unto
" your Children, how much more ſhall
" your heavenly Father give the holy
" Spirit to them that ask him?

SECT. XCIV.

Jeſus cures one poſſeſs'd with a Dumb Dæmon, which Miracle Chriſt maintains againſt the Calumny of the Phariſees. Shews who are bleſſed, and treats of the Obſtinacy of the Jews who required a Miracle.

Luk. xi. 14. AND [*Jeſus*] was caſting out a Devil, and it was dumb. And it came to paſs, when the Devil was gone out, the dumb ſpake: and the people
15. wondred. But ſome of them ſaid, *He caſteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils.*
16. And others tempting him, ſought of
17. him a ſign from heaven. But he knowing their thoughts, ſaid unto them,
" Every kingdom divided againſt it
" ſelf, is brought to deſolation: and a
" houſe divided againſt a houſe falleth.
18. " If Satan alſo be divided againſt him-
" ſelf, how ſhall his kingdom ſtand?
" becauſe ye ſay that I caſt out devils

" through

Anno Ætat 32. Minist. 3.

" through Beelzebub: and if I by Beel- Bethany.
" zebub cast out devils, by whom do Luk. xi.
" your sons cast them out? there- 19.
" fore they shall be your judges. But 20.
" if I with the finger of God cast out
" devils, no doubt the kingdom of God
" is come upon you. When a strong 21.
" man armed keepeth his palace, his
" goods are in peace. But when a 22.
" stronger than he shall come upon him,
" and overcome him, he taketh from
" him all his armour wherein he trust-
" ed, and divideth his spoils.
" He that is not with me is against 23.
" me; and he that gathereth not with
" me scattereth. When the unclean 24.
" Spirit is gone out of a man, he walk-
" eth through dry places, seeking rest
" and finding none, he saith, I will
" return unto my house whence I came
" out. And when he cometh he find- 25.
" eth it swept and garnished. Then 26.
" goeth he, and taketh to him seven
" other Spirits more wicked than him-
" self, and they enter in and dwell
" there: and the last state of the man
" is worse than the first.

And it came to pass as he spake 27.
these things, a certain woman of the
company lift up her voice, and said
unto him, *Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.* But he said, *Yea, rather blessed are* 28.
they that hear the word of God and keep it.

And

Bethany. Anno
Luk. xi. 29. And when the people were gathered Ætat. 32.
thick together, he began to say, "This Minist. 3.
"is an evil generation: they seek a
"sign, and there shall no sign be given
"it, but the sign of Jonas the pro-
30. "phet. For as Jonas was a sign to
"the Ninivites, so shall also the Son
31. "of Man be to this generation. The
"(a) Queen of the south shall rise up
"in the judgment with the men of
"this generation, and condemn them:
"for she came from the utmost parts
"of the earth, to hear the wisdom of
"Solomon, and behold a greater than
32. "Solomon is here. The men of (b) Ni-
"niveh shall rise up in the judgment
"with this generation, and shall con-
"demn it: for they repented at the
"preaching of Jonas; and behold a
33. "greater than Jonas is here. No man
"when he hath lighted a candle, put-
"teth it in a secret place, neither un-
"der a bushel; but on a candlestick,
"that they which come in may see the
34. "light. The light of the body is the
"eye: therefore when thine eye is
"single, thy whole body also is full
"of light: but when thine eye is evil,
"thy body also is full of darkness.

(a) *Queen of the South.* In 1 *Kings* x. 1. She is call'd the Queen of *Sheba* or *Saba*, the Metropolis of *Sabæa*, a part of *Arabia felix*, which lay south from *Jerusalem*.

(b) *Niniveh*, a very great Town, on the East side of the River *Tigris*, the Metropolis of *Assyria*.

"Take

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" Take heed therefore that the light Bethany.
" which is in thee be not darkness. Luk. xi.
" If thy whole body therefore be full 35.
" of light, having no part dark, the 36.
" whole shall be full of light, as when
" the bright shining of a candle doth
" give thee light.

SECT. XCV.

Jesus is invited to Dinner by a Pharisee, he inveighs against the Hypocrites who laid Snares for him.

AND as [*Jesus*] spake, a certain 37.
Pharisee besought him to dine
with him: and he went in and sat
down to meat. And when the Phari- 38.
see saw it, he marvelled that he had
not first washed before dinner. And 39.
the Lord said unto him, " Now do
" ye Pharisees make clean the outside
" of the cup and the platter: but your
" inward part is full of ravening and
" wickedness. Ye fools, did not he 40.
" that made that which is without,
" make that which is within also?
" But rather give alms of such things 41.
" as ye have: and behold all such
" things are clean unto you. But wo 42.
" unto you Pharisees: for ye tithe mint
" and rue, and all manner of herbs,
" and pass over judgment and the love

" of

Bethany. Luk. xi.] " of God: theſe ye ought to have done, " and not to leave the other undone. Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.
" 43. Wo unto your Phariſees; for ye love " the uppermoſt ſeats in the Synagogue, " and greetings in the Markets. Wo
" 44. unto you Scribes and Phariſees, Hy- " pocrites: for ye are as graves which " appear not, and the men that walk " over them, are not aware *of them.*
" Then anſwered one of the Lawyers,
" 45. and ſaid unto him, *Maſter, thus*
46. *ſaying, thou reproacheſt us alſo.* And he ſaid, " Wo unto you alſo ye Law- " yers; for ye lade men with burthens " grievous to be born, and ye your " ſelves touch not the burthens with
" 47. one of your fingers. Wo unto you: " for ye build the Sepulchres of the " Prophets, and your Fathers kill'd
" 48. them. Truly ye bear Witneſs that " ye allow the deeds of your Fathers: " for they indeed killed them, and ye
" 49. build their Sepulchres. Therefore " alſo ſaid the wiſdom of God, I will " ſend them Prophets and Apoſtles, " and ſome of them they ſhall ſlay
" 50. and perſecute: That the blood of all " the Prophets, which was ſhed from " the foundation of the world, may be
" 51. required of this generation; from the " blood of Abel unto the blood of Za- " charias, which periſhed between the " altar and the temple: Verily I ſay " unto you, it ſhall be required of this
" 52. generation. Wo unto you Lawyers: " for ye have taken away the key of

" know-

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" knowledge: ye entred not in your Bethany.
" selves, and them that were entring Luke xi.
" in, ye hindred.

And as he said these things unto 53.
them, the Scribes and Pharisees began
to urge him vehemently, and to provoke
him to speak of many things: laying 54.
wait for him, and seeking to catch some-
thing out of his mouth, that they might
accuse him.

SECT. XCVI.

Divers Precepts of Christ concerning the Leaven of the Pharisees, of preaching the Gospel boldly, and with plainness, of the Sin against the Holy Ghost, Avarice, Anxiety for things to come, Liberality to the Poor, Watchfulness, the Dissentions that shall arise from the preaching of the Gospel through the prævity of Mankind; of the Signs of the coming of the Messiah, and reconciling our selves to our Enemies.

IN the mean time, when there were 1. Luk. xii.
gathered together an innumerable
multitude of people, insomuch that
they trod one upon another, [*Jesus*]
began to say to his disciples first of all,
" Beware ye of the leaven of the Pha-
" risees,

Bethany. Luk. xii.

" riſees, which is hypocriſy. For there
2. " is nothing covered, that ſhall not be
" revealed; neither hid, that ſhall not
3. " be known. Therefore whatſoever ye
" have ſpoken in darkneſs, ſhall be
" heard in the light: and that which
" ye have ſpoken in the ear in cloſets,
" ſhall be proclaimed upon the houſe
4. " top. And I ſay unto you my friends,
" Be not afraid of them that kill the
" body, and after that have no more
5. " that they can do. But I will fore-
" warn you whom ye ſhall fear: Fear
" him which after he hath killed, hath
" power to caſt into hell; yea, I ſay
" unto you, fear him.
6. " Are not five ſparrows ſold for two
" farthings, and not one of them is for-
7. " gotten before God? But even the very
" hairs of your head are all numbred.
" Fear not therefore: ye are of more
" value than many ſparrows.
8. " Alſo I ſay unto you, whoſoever
" ſhall confeſs me before men, him
" ſhall the Son of Man alſo confeſs be-
9. " fore the angels of God. But he that
" denieth me before men, ſhall be deni-
10. " ed before the angels of God. And who-
" ſoever ſhall ſpeak a word againſt the
" Son of Man, it ſhall be forgiven
" him: but to him that blaſphemeth
" againſt the Holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not
" be forgiven.
11. " And when they bring you to the
" ſynagogues, and to magiſtrates and
" powers, take ye no thought how or
" what

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

" what thing ye ſhall anſwer, or what Bethany.
" ye ſhall ſay: For the Holy Ghoſt Luk. xii.
" ſhall teach you in the ſame hour 12.
" what ye ought to ſay.

And one of the company ſaid unto
him, *Maſter, ſpeak to my brother that* 13.
he divide the inheritance with me. And
he ſaid unto him, " Man, who made 14.
" me a judge, or a divider over you?
And he ſaid unto them, " Take heed, 15.
" and beware of coveteouſneſs: for a
" man's life conſiſteth not in the abun-
" dance of the things which he poſ-
" ſeſſeth. And he ſpake a parable to 16.
them, ſaying, " The ground of a cer-
" tain rich man brought forth plenti-
" fully, and he thought within him- 17.
" ſelf, ſaying, What ſhall I do, becauſe
" I have no room where to beſtow my
" fruits? And he ſaid this will I do: 18.
" I will pull down my barns, and
" build greater; and there will I be-
" ſtow all my fruits and my goods.
" And I will ſay to my ſoul: Soul, 19.
" thou haſt much goods laid up for
" many years: take thine eaſe, eat,
" drink and be merry. But God ſaid 20.
" unto him, Thou fool, this night thy
" ſoul ſhall be required of thee: then
" whoſe ſhall thoſe things be which
" thou haſt provided? So is he that 21.
" layeth up treaſure for himſelf, and
" is not rich towards God.

And he ſaid unto his diſciples, 22.
" Therefore I ſay unto you, Take no
" thought for your life, what ye ſhall

Bethany. " eat; neither for the body, what ye Anno
Luk. xii. " ſhall put on. The life is more than Ætat. 32.
23. " meat, and the body is more than rai- Miniſt. 3.
24. " ment. Conſider the ravens: for they
" neither ſow nor reap; which nei-
" ther have ſtore-houſe nor barn; and
" God feedeth them: How much more
25. " are ye better than the fowls? And
" which of you with taking thought
" can add to his ſtature one cubit?
26. " If ye then be not able to do that
" thing which is leaſt, why take ye
" thought for the reſt?
27. " Conſider the lilies how they grow:
" They toil not, they ſpin not: and
" yet I ſay unto you, that Solomon in
" all his glory, was not array'd like
28. " one of theſe. If then God ſo clothe
" the graſs, which is to day in the
" field, and to morrow is caſt into the
" oven: how much more will he clothe
29. " you, O ye of little faith? And ſeek
" not ye what ye ſhall eat, or what
" ye ſhall drink, neither be ye of
30. " doubtful mind. For all theſe things
" do the nations of the world ſeek
" after: and your father knoweth that
31. " ye have need of theſe things. But
" rather ſeek ye the kingdom of God,
" and all theſe things ſhall be added
32. " unto you. Fear not little flock; for
" it is your Father's good pleaſure to
" give you the kingdom.
33. " Sell that ye have, and give alms;
" provide your ſelves bags which wax
" not old, a treaſure in the heavens

that

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" that faileth not, where no thief ap- Bethany.
" proacheth, neither moth corrupteth. Luk. xii.
" For where the treasure, is there will 34.
" your heart be also.
" Let your Loyns be girded about, 35.
" and your lights burning; and ye your 36.
" selves like unto men that wait for
" their Lord, when he will return from
" the wedding, that when he cometh
" and knocketh, they may open unto
" him immediately.
" Blessed are those servants, whom 37.
" the Lord, when he cometh, shall find
" watching. Verily I say unto you, that
" he shall gird himself, and make them
" to sit down to meat, and will come
" forth and serve them. And if he 38.
" shall come in the second watch, or
" come in the third watch, and find
" them so; blessed are those servants.
" And this know, that if the good 39.
" man of the house had known what
" hour the thief would come, he would
" have watched, and not have suffered
" his house to be broken through. Be 40.
" ye therefore ready also: for the Son
" of man cometh at an hour where ye
" think not.
Then Peter said unto him, *Lord,* 41.
speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?
And the Lord said, " Who then is 42.
" that faithful and wise steward, whom
" his Lord shall make ruler over his
" houshold to give them their portion
" of meat in due season? Blessed is 43.

Bethany. " that ſervant, whom his Lord when Anno
Luk. xii. " he cometh ſhall find ſo doing. Of Ætat. 32.
44. " a truth I ſay unto you, that he will Miniſt. 3.
" make him ruler over all that he hath.
45. " But and if that ſervant ſay in his
" heart, My Lord delayeth his com-
" ing; and ſhall begin to beat the men-
" ſervants, and maidens, and to eat
46. " and drink, and to be drunken: The
" Lord of that ſervant will come in a
" day when he looketh not for him,
" and at an hour when he is not aware,
" and will cut him in ſunder, and will
" appoint him his portion with the
47. " unbelievers. And that ſervant which
" knew his Lord's will, and prepared
" not himſelf, neither did according to
" his will, ſhall be beaten with many
48. " ſtripes. But he that knew not,
" and did commit things worthy of
" ſtripes, ſhall be beaten with few
" ſtripes. For unto whomſoever much
" is given, of him ſhall be much re-
" quired: and to whom men have
" committed much, of him they will
" ask the more.
49. " I am come to ſend fire on earth;
" what will I if it be already kindled?
50. " But I have a baptiſm to be baptized
" with, and how am I ſtraitned till
51. " it be accompliſhed! Suppoſe ye that
" I am come to give peace on earth?
" I tell you, nay; but rather diviſion.
52. " For from henceforth there ſhall be
" five in one houſe divided, three a-
" gainſt two, and two againſt three.

" The

Anno. Ætat 32. Minist. 3.

" The father shall be divided against Bethany.
" the son, and the son against the fa- Luk. xii.
" ther: the mother against the daugh- 53.
" ther, and the daughter against the
" mother: the mother-in-law against
" the daughter-in-law; and the daugh-
" ter-in-law against the mother-in-
" law.
" And he said also to the people, 54.
" When ye see a cloud rise out of the
" west, straightway ye say, There com-
" eth a shower; and so it is.
" And when ye see the south wind 55.
" blow, ye say, There will be heat;
" and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, 56.
" ye can discern the face of the sky,
" and of the earth: but how is it, that
" ye do not discern this time? Yea, 57.
" and why even of your selves judge
" ye not what is right? When thou 58.
" goest with thine adversary to the
" magistrate, as thou art in the way,
" give diligence that thou mayest be
" delivered from him; lest he hale
" thee to the judge, and the judge de-
" liver thee to the officer, and the
" officer cast thee into prison. I tell 59.
" thee, thou shalt not depart thence,
" till thou hast paid the very last
" mite.

Galilee. Luk. xiii.

Anno 32° Ætat. Miniſt. 3.

SECT. XCVII.

Jeſus informs his hearers that Misfortunes very often happen to Men not worſe than others. The Parable of the Fig-tree.

1. THere were preſent at the ſeaſon, ſome that told him of the Gali-
leans, whoſe blood Pilate had mingled
with their ſacrifices. 2. And Jeſus anſwer-
ing, ſaid unto them, " Suppoſe ye that
" theſe Galileans were ſinners above all
" the Galileans, becauſe they ſuffered
3. " ſuch things? I tell you, Nay, but ex-
" cept ye repent ye ſhall all likewiſe
4. " periſh. Or thoſe eighteen, upon
" whom the towre in Siloam fell, and
" ſlew them, think ye that they were
" ſinners above all men that dwelt in
5. " Jeruſalem? I tell you, Nay: but except
" ye repent, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.
6. He ſpake alſo this parable, " A cer-
" tain man had a fig-tree planted in
" his vineyard, and he came and ſought
7. " fruit thereon, and found none. Then
" ſaid he unto the dreſſer of his vine-
" yard, Behold theſe three years I come
" ſeeking fruit on this fig-tree, and
" find none: Cut it down, why cum-
8. " breth it the ground? And he an-
" ſwering, ſaid unto him, Lord, let
" it alone this year alſo, till I ſhall
" dig about it, and dung it: And if

" it

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shall cut it down. Galilee. Luk. xiii.

SECT. XCVIII.

The Cure of a Woman on the Sabbath-day, which Christ maintains against the Cavils of the Ruler of the Synagogue.

AND [*Jesus*] was teaching in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath. And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, *Woman thou art loosed from thine infirmity*, And he laid his hands on her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath-day, and said unto the people, *There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.* The Lord then answered him, and said, " Thou hypocrite, doth not " each one of ye on the Sabbath-day, " loose his ox or his ass from the stall, " and lead him away to watering? " And ought not this woman, being a

10. 11. 12. 13. Miracle. 14. 15. 16.

Galilee. Luk. xiii.

" a daughter of Abraham, whom Sa- Anno
" tan hath bound, lo, these eighteen Ætat. 32.
" years, be loosed from this bond on Minist. 3.
" the sabbath day?

17. And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18. Then said he, " Unto what is the
" kingdom of God like? and where-
19. " unto shall I resemble it? It is like a
" grain of Mustard-seed, which a man
" took, and cast into his garden, and
" it grew, and waxed a great tree:
" and the fowls of the air lodged in
20. " the branches of it. And again he
said, " Whereunto shall I liken the
21. " kingdom of God? It is like leaven,
" which a Woman took and hid in three
" measures of meal, till the whole was
" leavened.

SECT. XCIX.

Jesus is going towards Jerusalem: His answer to one that asked if many should be saved.

22. AND [*Jesus*] went through all ci-
ties and villages, teaching and
23. journying towards Jerusalem. Then
said one unto him, Lord, *are there few that be saved?* And he said unto them,
24. " Strive to enter in at the strait gate:
" for many I say unto you will seek to
" enter

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" enter in, and shall not be able. When Galilee.
" once the master of the house is risen up, 25. Luk. xiii.
" and hath shut to the door, and ye begin
" to stand without and to knock at the
" door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us;
" and he shall answer and say unto you,
" I know you not whence you are. Then 26.
" shall ye begin to say, We have eaten
" and drunk in thy presence, and thou
" hast taught in our streets. But he 27.
" shall say, I tell you, I know not
" whence you are; depart from me all
" ye workers of iniquity. There shall 28.
" be weeping and gnashing of teeth,
" when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac,
" and Jacob, and all the prophets in
" the kingdom of God, and you your
" selves thrust out. And they shall 29.
" come from the east, and from the
" west, and from the north, and from
" the south, and shall sit in the king-
" dom of God: And behold there are 30.
" last which shall be first, and there
" are first which shall be last.

SECT. C.

Jesus is warned of Herod, he foretells his Death at Jerusalem.

THE same day there came certain 31.
of the Pharisees, saying unto him;
Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee. And he said unto 32.
them, " Go ye and tell that fox, Be-
" hold I cast out Devils, and I do cures

" to

Galilee. " to day and to morrow, and the third Anno
Luk. xiii. 33. " day I ſhall be perfected. Neverthe- Ætat. 32.
" leſs I muſt walk to day and to mor- Miniſt. 3.
" row, and the day following: for it
" cannot be that a prophet periſh out
34. " of Jeruſalem. O Jeruſalem, Jeruſa-
" lem, which killeſt the prophets, and
" ſtoneſt them that are ſent to thee:
" How often would I have gathered
" thy children together, as a hen doth
" gather her brood under her wings,
35. " and ye would not? Behold your
" houſe is left to you deſolate: and
" verily I ſay unto you, Ye ſhall not
" ſee me, until the time come when
" ye ſhall ſay, Bleſſed is he that cometh
" in the name of the Lord.

SECT. CI.

A Man ſick of the Dropſy cured by Jeſus on the Sabbath-day. Advice concerning taking the loweſt place at a Banquet, and inviting the Poor. The Parable of the Supper.

Luk. xiv. 1. AND it came to paſs, as he went into the houſe of one of the chief Phariſees to eat bread on the ſabbath-
2. day, that they watched him. And be-
hold, there was a certain man before
3. him which had the dropſy. And Jeſus
anſwering, ſpake unto the Lawyers and
Phariſees, ſaying, *Is it lawful to heal on*
4. *the ſabbath day?* And they held their
peace.

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

peace. And he took him and healed him, and let him go: And anſwered them, ſaying, *Which of you ſhall have an aſs or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not ſtraightway pull him out on the ſabbath day?* And they could not anſwer him again to theſe things. Galilee. Luk. xiv. Miracle. 5. 6.

And he put forth a parable to thoſe which were bidden, when he marked how they choſe out the chief rooms; ſaying unto them, "When thou art bid- 7. 8.
" den of any man to a wedding, ſit
" not down in the higheſt room, leſt
" a more honourable man than thou be
" bidden of him; and he that bad thee 9.
" and him, come and ſay to thee, Give
" this man place, and thou begin with
" ſhame to take the loweſt room. But 10.
" when thou art bidden, go, and ſit in
" the loweſt room; that when he that
" bad thee cometh, he may ſay unto
" thee, Friend, go up higher: then
" ſhalt thou have worſhip in the pre-
" ſence of them that ſit at meat with
" thee. For whoſoever exalteth himſelf, 11.
" ſhall be abaſed, and he that hum-
" bleth himſelf, ſhall be exalted.

Then ſaid he alſo to him that bad 12. him, "When thou makeſt a dinner or
" a ſupper, call not thy friend, nor
" thy brethren, neither thy kinſmen, nor
" thy rich neighbours; leſt they alſo
" bid thee again, and a recompence be
" made thee. But when thou makeſt 13.
" a feaſt, call the poor, the maimed,
" the lame, the blind: And thou ſhalt

" be

Galilee. Luk. xiv. 14. " be bleſſed; for they cannot recom- " pence thee: for thou ſhalt be re- " compenced at the reſurrection of the " juſt. Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

15. And when one of them that ſat at meat with him, heard theſe things, he ſaid unto him, *Bleſſed is he that ſhall eat*
16. *bread in the kingdom of God.* Then ſaid he unto him, " A certain man " made a great ſupper, and bad many:
17. " And ſent his ſervant at ſupper time " to ſay to them that were bidden, " Come, for all things are now ready.
18. " And they all with one conſent began " to make excuſe. The firſt ſaid unto " him, I have bought a piece of ground, " and I muſt needs go and ſee it: I
19. " pray thee have me excuſed. And " another ſaid, I have bought five yoke " of oxen, and I go to prove them: I
20. " pray thee have me excuſed. And a- " nother ſaid, I have married a wife,
21. " and therefore cannot come. So that " ſervant came and ſhewed his Lord " theſe things. Then the maſter of " the houſe being angry, ſaid to his " ſervant, go out quickly into the ſtreets " and lanes of the city, and bring in " hither the poor and the maimed, and
22. " the halt, and the blind. And the ſer- " vant ſaid, Lord, it is done as thou " haſt commanded, and yet there is " room. And the Lord ſaid unto the
23. " ſervant, Go out into the highways " and hedges, and compel them to " come in, that my houſe may be fill'd.

For

Anno Ætat. 22. Minist. 3.

" For I say unto you, that none of those Galilee.
" men which were bidden, shall taste 24. Luk. xiv.
" of my supper.

SECT. CII.

Great Multitudes follow Jesus; he tells his Disciples what resolution of Mind they ought to be endu'd with.

AND there went great multitudes 25.
with [*Jesus*] and he turned, and 26.
said unto them, " If any man come to
" me, and hate not his father, and mo-
" ther, and wife, and children, and bre-
" thren, and sisters, yea, and his own life
" also, he cannot be my disciple. And 27.
" whosoever doth not bear his cross, and
" come after me, cannot be my disci-
" ple. For which of you intending to 28.
" build a towre, sitteth not down first,
" and counteth the cost, whether he
" have sufficient to finish it: Lest hap- 29.
" ly after he hath laid the foundation,
" and is not able to finish it, all that
" behold it, begin to mock him, say-
" ing, This man began to build, and 30.
" was not able to finish. Or what king 31.
" going to make war against another
" king, sitteth not down first, and con-
" sulteth whether he be able with ten
" thousand men to meet him that com-
" eth against him with twenty thou-
" sand: Or else, while the other is 32.
" yet

Galilee. " yet a great way off, he ſendeth an Anno
Luk. xiv. " embaſſage, and deſireth conditions of Ætat. 32.
" peace. So likewiſe, whoſoever he be Miniſt. 3.
" of you, that forſaketh not all that he
" hath, he cannot be my diſciple. Salt
" is good: but if the ſalt have loſt
" his ſavour, wherewith ſhall it be
" ſeaſoned? It is neither fit for the
" land, nor yet for the dunghil; but
" men caſt it out. He that hath ears to
" hear, let him hear.

SECT. CIII.

Jeſus delivers ſeveral Parables, repreſenting the care God takes of the greateſt Sinners, and the kindneſs with which he receives the truly Penitent.

Luk. xv. THEN drew near to [*Jeſus*] all the Publicans and Sinners for to hear him. And the Phariſees and Scribes murmured, ſaying, *This man receiveth ſinners, and eateth with them.* And he ſpake this parable to them, ſaying, " What man of you having an hundred ſheep, if he loſe one of them, " doth not leave the ninety and nine " in the wilderneſs, and go after that " which is loſt, until he find it? And " when he hath found it, he layeth it " on his ſhoulders, rejoycing: And " when he cometh home, he calleth

" together

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

" together his friends and neighbours, Galilee.
" ſaying to them, Rejoice with me, Luk. xv.
" for I have found my ſheep which
" was loſt. I ſay unto you, that like- 7.
" wiſe joy ſhall be in heaven over one
" ſinner that repenteth, more than over
" ninety and nine juſt perſons, which
" need no repentance. Either what wo- 8.
" man having ten pieces of ſilver, if
" ſhe loſe one piece, doth not light a
" candle, and ſweep the houſe, and
" ſeek diligently till ſhe find it? And 9.
" when ſhe hath found it, ſhe calleth
" her friends and her neighbours toge-
" ther, ſaying, Rejoice with me, for
" I have found the piece which I had
" loſt. Likewiſe I ſay unto you, There 10.
" is joy in the preſence of the Angels
" of God, over one ſinner that re-
" peneth.

And he ſaid, " A certain man had 11.
" two ſons, and the younger of them 12.
" ſaid to his father, Father, give me
" the portion of goods that falleth to
" me. And he divided to them his
" living. And not many days after, 13.
" the younger ſon gathered all together,
" and took his journey into a far coun-
" try, and there waſted his ſubſtance
" with riotous living. And when he 14.
" had ſpent all, there aroſe a mighty
" famine in that land; and he began to
" be in want. And he went and joyned 15.
" himſelf to a citizen of that coun-
" try; and he ſent him into his
" fields to feed ſwine. And he would 16.

" fain

Galilee. Luk. xv.

" fain have fill'd his belly with the
" husks that the ſwine did eat, and no
" man gave to him. And when he
" came to himſelf, he ſaid, How ma-
" ny hired ſervants of my fathers have
" bread enough and to ſpare, and I pe-
18. " riſh with hunger! I will ariſe and
" go to my father, and will ſay unto
" him, Father, I have ſinned againſt
19. " heaven and before thee, and am no
" more worthy to be called thy ſon:
" make me as one of thy hired ſer-
20. " vants. And he aroſe and came to his
" father. But when he was a great
" way off, his father ſaw him, and had
" compaſſion, and ran, and fell on his
21. " neck, and kiſſed him. And the Son
" ſaid to him, Father, I have ſinned
" againſt heaven, and in thy ſight, and
" am no more worthy to be call'd thy
22. " ſon. But the father ſaid to his ſer-
" vants, Bring forth the beſt robe, and
" put it on him, and put a ring on
23. " his hand, and ſhoes on his feet, And
" bring hither the fatted calf, and kill
24. " it; and let us eat and be merry. For
" this my ſon was dead, and is alive
" again; he was loſt, and is found.
25. " And they began to be merry. Now
" his elder Son was in the field: and
" as he came and drew nigh to the
" houſe, he heard muſick and dancing.
26. " And he called one of the ſervants,
" and asked what theſe things meant?
27. " And he ſaid unto him, Thy brother is
" come; and thy father hath killed the
" fatted

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" fatted calf, becauſe he hath re- Luk. xv.
" ceived him ſafe and ſound. And 28.
" he was angry, and would not go
" in: therefore came his father out,
" and intreated him, And he anſwer- 29
" ing, ſaid to his father, Lo theſe
" many years do I ſerve thee, nei-
" ther tranſgreſſed I at any time
" thy commandment, and yet thou
" never gaveſt me a kid, that I might
" make merry with my friends: But 30.
" as ſoon as this thy ſon was come,
" which hath devoured thy living
" with harlots, thou haſt killed for
" him the fatted calf. And he ſaid 31.
" unto him, Son, thou art ever with
" me, and all that I have is thine.
" It was meet that we ſhould make 32.
" merry, and be glad: for this thy
" brother was dead, and is alive a-
" gain; and was loſt, and is found.

SECT. CIV.

A Similitude concerning the true uſe of Riches. The Parable of the wealthy Glutton and the Beggar Lazarus, relating to it.

AND [*Jeſus*] ſaid alſo unto his 1. Luk. xvi.
diſciples, " There was a cer-
" tain rich man which had a Steward;
" and the ſame was accuſed to him
" that he had waſted his Goods.
" And he called him, and ſaid to 2.

Luk. xvi.

" him, How is it that I hear this of Anno
" thee? give an account of thy Ætat. 32.
" Stewardſhip; for thou mayeſt be Miniſt. 3.
3. " no longer Steward. Then the
" Steward ſaid within himſelf, What
" ſhall I do? for my Lord taketh a-
" way from me the Stewardſhip, I
" cannot dig, to beg I am aſhamed,
4. " I am reſolved what to do, that
" when I am put out of the Steward-
" ſhip, they may receive me into
5. " their houſes. So he called every
" one of his Lord's debtors to him,
" and ſaid unto the firſt, How much
6. " oweſt thou to my Lord? And he
" ſaid, a hundred meaſures of oil.
" And he ſaid unto him, Take thy
" bill, and ſit down quickly and
7. " write fifty. Then ſaid he to ano-
" ther, And how much oweſt thou?
" And he ſaid, A hundred meaſures
" of wheat. And he ſaid unto him,
" Take thy bill, and write fourſcore.
8. " And the Lord commended the un-
" juſt Steward, becauſe he had done
" wiſely: for the children of this
" world are in their generation wi-
9. " ſer than the children of light. And
" I ſay unto you, make to your ſelves
" friends of the Mammon of un-
" righteouſneſs, that when ye fail,
" they may receive you into ever-
" laſting habitations.
10. " He that is faithful in that which
" is leaſt, is faithful alſo in much:
" and he that is unjuſt in the leaſt,

" is

Anno Ætat. 32. Miniſt. 3.

" is unjuſt alſo in much: If there- 11. Luk. xvi.
" fore ye have not been faithful in
" the unrighteous Mammon, who
" will commit to your truſt the true
" riches? And if ye have not been 12.
" faithful in that which is another
" mans, who ſhall give you that
" which is your own? No ſervant 13.
" can ſerve two maſters: for either
" he will hate the one, and love the
" other; or elſe he will hold to the
" one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye
" cannot ſerve God and Mammon.
And the Phariſees alſo who were 14.
covetous, heard all theſe things;
and they derided him. And he ſaid 15.
unto them, " Ye are they which ju-
" ſtifie your ſelves before men; But
" God knoweth your hearts: for
" that which is highly eſteemed a-
" mongſt men, is abomination in the
" ſight of God: The Law and the 16.
" Prophets were until John: ſince
" that time the kingdom of God is
" preached, and every man preſſeth
" into it. And it is eaſier for hea- 17.
" ven and earth to paſs, than one
" tittle of the law to fail.
" Whoſoever putteth away his 18.
" wife, and marrieth another, com-
" mitteth adultery: whoſoever mar-
" rieth her that is put away from
" her husband, committeth adul-
" tery.
" There was a certain rich man, 19.
" which was clothed in purple and

Galilee. Anno
Luk. xvi. 20. " fine linen, and fared ſumptuouſ- Ætat. 32.
" ly every day. And there was a Miniſt. 3.
" certain beggar named Lazarus,
" which was laid at his gate full of
21. " ſores: And deſiring to be fed with
" the crumbs which fell from the
" rich man's table: moreover the
" dogs came and licked his ſores.
22. " And it came to paſs that the beg-
" gar died, and was carried by the
" angels into Abraham's boſom:
" the rich man alſo died, and was
23. " buried. And in hell he lift up his
" eyes being in torments, and ſeeth
" Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in
24. " his boſom. And he cried, and
" ſaid, Father Abraham, have mer-
" cy on me, and ſend Lazarus that
" he may dip the tip of his finger
" in water and cool my tongue, for
25. " I am tormented in this flame. But
" Abraham ſaid, Son, remember that
" thou in thy life time receiveſt
" thy good things, and likewiſe La-
" zarus evil things: but now he is
" comforted, and thou art tormen-
26. " ted. And beſides all this, between
" us and you there is a great gulph
" fixed: ſo that they which would
" paſs from hence to you, cannot;
" neither can they paſs to us, that
27. " would come from thence. Then
" he ſaid, I pray thee therefore, fa-
" ther, that thou wouldſt ſend him
28. " to my father's houſe. For I have
" five brethren; that he may teſtifie

" to

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" to them, lest they also come into Luk. xvi.
" this place of torment. Abraham
" saith unto him, They have Mo- 29.
" ses and the Prophets; let them
" hear them, And he said, nay, fa- 30.
" ther Abraham: but if one went
" to them from the dead, they will
" repent. And he said unto him, 31.
" If they hear not Moses and the
" Prophets, neither will they be per-
" suaded, though one rose from the
" dead.

SECT. CV.

Jesus speaks to his disciples concerning Offences, pardoning of Injuries, the increase of Faith, and unprofitable Servants.

THen said [*Jesus*] unto the dis- 1. Luk. xvii.
ciples, " It is impossible but
" that offences will come: But wo
" unto him through whom they
" come. It were better for him that 2;
" a millstone were hanged about his
" neck, and he cast into the sea, than
" that he should offend one of these
" little ones.
" Take heed to your selves: if 3.
" thy brother trespass against thee,
" rebuke him; and if he repent for-
" give him. And if he trespass a- 4.
" gainst thee seven times in a day,
" and seven times in a day turn again

Luk. xvii. " to thee, saying, I repent; thou " shalt forgive him. Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

5. And the Apostles said unto the
6. Lord, *increase our faith.* And the Lord said, "If ye had faith as a " grain of mustard seed, ye might " say unto this sycamine tree, Be " thou plucked up by the root, and " be thou planted in the sea; and it " should obey you.

7. " But which of you having a ser-
" vant plowing, or feeding cattle,
" will say unto him by and by when
" he is come from the field, Go and
8. " sit down to meat? And will not
" rather say unto him, Make ready
" wherewith I may sup, and gird
" thy self, and serve me, till I have
" eaten and drunken; and afterward
9. " thou shall eat and drink? Doth
" he thank that servant because he
" did the things that were com-
10. " manded him? I trow not. So
" likewise ye, when ye shall have
" done all those things which are
" commanded you, say, we are un-
" profitable servants: we have
" done that which was our duty to
" do.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

Luk. xvii.

SECT. CVI.

Ten Lepers cleansed, one of whom returns and gives thanks to Jesus.

AND it came to pass as [*Jesus*] went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: And they lifted up their voices, and said, *Jesus Master, have mercy on us.* And when he saw them, he said unto them, *Go shew your selves to the priests.* And it came to pass that as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering, said, *Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.* And he said unto him, *Arise, go thy ways, thy faith has made thee whole.*

11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19.

Luk. xvii.

Anno Ætat 32. Minist. 3.

SECT. CVII.

Jesus's answer to the Pharisees who asked when the Kingdom of God should come, and discourse with his Disciples concerning it.

20. AND when he was demanded of the Pharisees when the kingdom of God should come; he answered them and said, "The kingdom of God com-
21. "eth not with observation. Neither "shall they say, Lo here, or, lo there; "for behold, the kingdom of God is
22. "within you. And he said unto the disciples, "The days will come when "ye shall desire to see one of the days "of the son of man, and ye shall not
23. "see it. And they shall say to you, "See here, or see there: go not after
24. "them, nor follow them. For as the "lightning that lightneth out of the one "part under heaven, shineth to the o-"ther part under heaven: so shall also
25. "the son of man be in his day. But "first must he suffer many things, and
26. "be rejected of this generation. And "as it was in the days of Noe, so shall "it be also in the days of the son of
27. "man. They did eat, they drank, they "married wives, they were given in "marriage, until the day that Noe en-"tred into the ark: and the flood came
28. "and destroyed them all. Likewise "also

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

" alſo as it was in the days of Lot, Luk. xvii.
" they did eat, they drank, they bought,
" they ſold, they planted, they build-
" ed: But the ſame day that Lot went 29.
" out of Sodom, it rained fire and brim-
" ſtone from heaven, and deſtroyed
" them all: even thus ſhall it be in the 30.
" day when the ſon of man is revealed.
" In that day, he which ſhall be upon 31.
" the houſe top, and his ſtuff in the
" houſe, let him not come down to
" take it away; and he that is in the
" field, let him likewiſe not return
" back. Remember Lot's wife. Who- 32.
" ſoever ſhall ſeek to ſave his life, ſhall 33.
" loſe it: and whoſoever ſhall loſe his
" life, ſhall preſerve it. I tell you in 34.
" that night there ſhall be two men in
" one bed; the one ſhall be taken, and
" the other ſhall be left. Two women 35.
" ſhall be grinding together; the one
" ſhall be taken, and the other left.
" Two men ſhall be in the field; 36.
" the one ſhall be taken, and the other
" left. And they anſwered and ſaid 37.
unto him, *Where, Lord?* and he ſaid
unto them, *Whereſoever the body is,*
thither will the eagles be gathered to-
gether.

SECT.

Luk. xviii.

Anno Ætat. 32. Minist. 3.

SECT. CVIII.

Parables in which Jesus shews the necessity of continuing instant in Prayer, and being humbly minded.

Luk. xviii. 1. AND [*Jesus*] spake a parable to them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; saying, 2. "There was in a city a judge, "which feared not God, neither re- 3. "garded man. And there was a wi- "dow in that city, and she came to "him, saying, Avenge me of mine 4. "adversary. And he would not for a "while: but afterward he said with- "in himself, Though I fear not God, 5. "nor regard man; Yet because this "widow troubleth me, I will avenge "her, lest by her continual coming she 6. "weary me. And the Lord said, Hear 7. "what the unjust judge saith. And "shall not God avenge his own elect, "which cry day and night unto him, 8. "though he bear long with them; I "tell you that he will avenge them "speedily. Nevertheless, when the "son of man cometh, shall he find "faith on the earth?

9. And he spake this parable to certain which trusted in themselves, that they were righteous, and despised others; 10. "Two men went up into the Temple "to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the

"other

Anno Ætat. 22. Minist. 3.

" other a Publican. The Pharisee stood 11. Luk. xviii.
" and prayed thus with himself: God I
" thank thee, that I am not as other
" men are, extortioners, unjust, adul-
" terers, or even as this Publican. I 12.
" fast twice in the week, I give tithes
" of all I possess. And the Publican 13.
" standing afar off, would not lift up
" so much as his eyes to heaven, but
" smote on his breast, saying, God be
" merciful to me a sinner. I tell you 14.
" this man went down to his house
" justified rather than the other: for
" every one that exalteth himself, shall
" be abased; and he that humbleth him-
" self shall be exalted.

SECT. CIX.

Jesus goes to Jerusalem against the Temple. *feast of Dedication, discourses in Solomon's Porch concerning the Jew's infidelity, and himself; they endeavour to stone him.*

AND it was at Jerusalem the feast 22. Joh. x.
of dedication, and it was win-
ter. And Jesus walked in the temple in 23.
Solomon's porch. Then came the Jews 24.
round about him, and said unto him,
How long dost thou make us to doubt?
If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.
Jesus answered them, " I told you, and 25.
" ye believed not; the works that I do

" in

Temple. Joh. x.

" in my Father's name, they bear wit- Anno
26. " neſs of me. But ye believe not, be- Ætat. 32.
" cauſe ye are not of my ſheep, as I Miniſt. 3.
27. " ſaid unto you. My ſheep hear my
" voice, and I know them, and they
28. " follow me, And I give unto them
" eternal life, and they ſhall never pe-
" riſh, neither ſhall any pluck them
29. " out of my hand. My father which
" gave them me, is greater than all:
" and none is able to pluck them out
30. " of my father's hand. I and my fa-
31. " ther are one. Then the Jews took
32. " up ſtones again to ſtone him. Jeſus
" anſwered them, Many good works
" have I ſhewed you from my father;
" for which of thoſe works do ye ſtone
33. " me? The Jews anſwered him, ſay-
ing, *For a good work we ſtone thee not, but for blaſphemy, and becauſe that thou, being a man, makeſt thy ſelf God.*
34. Jeſus anſwered them, " Is it not written
" in your Law, I ſaid, ye are Gods?
35. " If he called them Gods, unto whom
" the word of God came, and the
36. " Scripture cannot be broken: Say ye
" of him whom the father hath ſancti-
" fied, and ſent into the world, Thou
" blaſphemeſt; becauſe I ſaid I am the
37. " ſon of God? If I do not the works
38. " of my father, believe me not. But if
" I do, though ye believe not me, be-
" lieve the works, that ye may know
" and believe, that the father is in me,
39. " and I in him. Therefore they ſought

again

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

again to take him: but he escaped out Temple.
of their hand. Joh. x.

The End of the Third Year of Christ's Ministry.

SECT. CX.

Jesus goes into Judea beyond Jordan. He shews the unlawfulness of divorce for every cause.

AND it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, Coast of Judea beyond Jordan.

[a] Mar. x. 1. [a] he departed from Galilee, and came 1. Mat. xix.
Joh. x. 40. into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan,
* into the place where John at first bapti- 40. Joh. x.
[b] Mar. x. 1. zed; and there he abode *, [b] And great 2 Mat. xix.
Joh. x. 41. multitudes followed him *, and as he 1 Mar. x.
went, he taught them again, * and he heal- 2. Mat. xix.
ed them there * and [*they*] said, *John did* 41. Joh. x.
no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true. And many be- 42.
[c] Mar. x. 2, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. lieved on him there. * [c] The Pharisees 3. Mat. xix.
also came unto him, tempting him, and
saying unto him, *Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?*
And he answered and said unto them, 4.
" Have ye not read, that he which made
" them at the beginning, made them
" male and female? And said, for this 5.
" cause shall a man leave father and
" mother, and cleave to his wife: and
" they twain shall be one flesh. Where- 6.
" fore they are no more twain, but one
" flesh.

Coaſt of Judea beyond Jordan. Mat. xix. Mar. x. 3. Mat. xix.

" fleſh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put aſunder. Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

* And he anſwered and ſaid unto them,
7. *What did Moſes command you?* * They
ſay unto him, *Why did* [d] *Moſes then* [d] Mar. x. 4.
command to give a writing of divorce-
8. *ment, and to put her away?* He ſaith
unto them, " Moſes, [e] becauſe of the [e] Mar. x. 5.
" hardneſs of your hearts, ſuffered you
" to put away your wives: but from
9. " the beginning it was not ſo. And I
" ſay unto you, Whoſoever ſhall put
" away his wife, except it be for for-
" nication, and ſhall marry another,
" committeth adultery: and whoſo
1. " marrieth her which is put away, doth
" commit adultery.

Mar. x. 10. * And in the houſe his diſciples aſk-
11. ed him again of the ſame matter. And
he ſaith unto them, " Whoſoever ſhall
" put away his wife, and marry ano-
" ther, committeth adultery againſt her.
12. " And if a woman ſhall put away her
" husband, and be married to another,
Mat. xix. 10. " ſhe committeth adultery. * His diſ-
ciples ſay unto him, *If the caſe of the*
man be ſo with his wife, it is not good to
11. *marry.* But he ſaid unto them, " All
" men cannot receive this ſaying, ſave
" they to whom it is given. For there
" are ſome Eunuchs, which were ſo
" born from their mother's womb, and
" there are ſome Eunuchs, which were
" made Eunuchs of men: and there be
" Eunuchs which have made themſelves
" Eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's
" ſake.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" sake. He that is able to receive it, Coast of Judea beyond Jordan.
" let him receive it. Mar. xix.

SECT. CXL.

Little Children are brought to Jesus, on whom he lays his Hand.

[a] Mar. x. 13. Luk. xviii. 15. [a] THen were there brought to him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray, * and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. [b] But when Jesus saw it he was much displeased, and said to them, [b] Mat. xix. 14. Luk. xviii. 16. " suffer the little children to come to " me, and forbid them not: for of such [c] Mar. x. 15. " is the kingdom of God. * [c] Verily " I say unto you, Whosoever shall not " receive the kingdom of God as a " little child, shall in no wise enter " therein *. And he took them up [d] Mar. xix. 15. in his arms; [d] put his hands upon them, and blessed them *, and departed thence.

13. Mat. xix.
13. Mar. x.
14.
15. Luk. xviii.
16. Mar. x.
15. Mat. xix.

SECT. CXII.

Jesus answers the question of the rich young Man, who inquired the way to eternal Life.

In the way.

[e] Mat. xix. 16. [f] Mar. x. 17. AND when [*Jesus*] was gone forth into the way, [e] there came one running, and kneeling to him * a certain ruler, and asked him, saying, [f] *Good master*

17. Mar. x.
18. Luk. xviii.

In the way. *master * what good thing shall I do that* Anno
Mar. xix. 16. *I may * inherit eternal life?* [g] And Je- Ætat. 33.
Mar. x. 17. sus said unto him, *Why callest thou me* Minist. 4.
18. *good? there is none good but one, that* [g] Mat. xix.
Mat. xix. 17. *is God, * but if thou wilt enter into life,* 17.
18. *keep the commandments.* [h] He saith un- Luk. xviii.
to him, *Which?* Jesus said, *Thou shalt* 19.
do no murther, Thou shalt not commit [h] Mar. x. 19.
adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou Luk. xviii.
{Mar. x. 19. *shalt not bear false witness. * Defraud* 20.
{Mat. xix. 19. *not, * Honour thy father and thy mo-*
ther; and Thou shalt love thy neighbour
20. *as thy self.* The young man saith unto
Mar. x. 20. him, * *Master,* [i] *all these things have I* [i] Mat. xix.
Mat. xix. 20. *observed from my youth, * What lack I* 20, 21.
Luk. xviii. 22. *yet?* * Now when Jesus heard these Luk. xviii.
Mar. x. 21. things, * beholding him, loved him, 21, 22.
and said unto him, *One thing thou lack-*
Mat. xix. 21. *est, * If thou wilt be perfect, * go thy*
Mar. x. 21. *way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give*
to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure
in heaven; and come, take up the cross
Mat. xix. 22. *and follow me.* * [k] But when the young [k] Mar. x. 22.
man heard that saying, he went away Luk. xviii.
sorrowful: for he had great possessions. 23.
Luk. xviii. 24. * And when Jesus saw that he was very
Mar. x. 23. sorrowful, * [*He*] looked round about,
[l] and saith unto his disciples, *How hard-* [l] Mat. xix.
ly shall they that have riches enter into 23.
24. *the kingdom of God!* And the disciples Luk. xviii.
were astonished at his words. But Je- 24.
sus answereth again, and saith unto
them, "Children, how hard is it for
Mat. xix. 24. "them that trust in riches, to enter
"into the kingdom of God; * [m] And [m] Mar. x. 25.
"again I say unto you, It is easier for a Luk. xviii.
"camel 25.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. [a]Luk. xviii. 26, 27. Mat. xix. 25, 26.

" camel to go through the eye of a
" needle, than for a rich man to enter
" into the kingdom of God. [a] When
his disciples heard it, they were ex-
ceedingly amazed, * Astonished out of
measure, saying amongst themselves,
Who then can be saved? And Jesus
looking upon them, saith, *With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.* * [b] Then
answered Peter, and said unto him, *Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; What shall we have therefore?*
And Jesus said unto them, " Verily I
" say unto you, that ye which follow-
" ed me in the regeneration, when the
" son of man shall sit in the throne of
" his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve
" thrones, judging the twelve tribes of
" Israel. * [c] Verily I say unto you,
" There is no man that hath left house,
" or brethren, or sisters, or father, or
" mother, or wife, or children, or lands
" for my sake and the gospels, but he
" shall receive an hundred fold now in
" this time, and houses, and brethren,
" and sisters, and mothers, and children,
" and lands, with persecutions; and in
" the world to come eternal life. * [d] But
" many that are first shall be last; and
" the last shall be first. For the king-
" dom of heaven is like unto a man
" that is an householder, which went
" out early in the morning to hire la-
" bourers into his vineyard. And when
" he had agreed with the labourers for a
" penny

In the way. Mat. xix. 25. Mar. x. [b] Mar. x. 28, 29. Luk. xviii. 28, 29. 27. Mat. xix. 28. 29. Mar. x. [c] Mat. xix. 29. Luk. xviii. 29, 30. 30. [d] Mar. x. 31. 30. Mat. xix. 1. Mat. xx. 2.

In the way. Mat. xx. penny a day, he ſent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour; and ſaw others ſtanding idle in the market place, And ſaid unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard, and whatſoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the ſixth and ninth hour, and did likewiſe. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others ſtanding idle, and ſaith unto them, Why ſtand ye here all the day idle? They ſay unto him, Becauſe no man hath hired us. He ſaith unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard, and whatſoever is right, that ſhall ye receive. So when even was come, the Lord of the vineyard ſaith unto his ſteward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the laſt unto the firſt. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the firſt came, they ſuppoſed that they ſhould have received more, and they likewiſe received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they murmured againſt the good man of the houſe, ſaying, Theſe laſt have wrought but one hour, and thou haſt made them equal unto us, which have born the burden and heat of the day. But he anſwered one of them, and ſaid, Friend, I do thee no wrong; didſt not

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

" not thou agree with me for a penny? In the way.
" Take that thine is, and go thy way: 14. Mat. xx.
" I will give unto this laſt, even as un-
" to thee. Is it not lawful for me to 15.
" do what I will with mine own? Is
" thine eye evil, becauſe I am good?
" So the laſt ſhall be firſt, and the firſt 16.
" laſt: for many be called, but few
" choſen.

SECT. CXIII.

The Reſurrection of Lazarus.

NOW a certain man was ſick, named Lazarus of Bethany, the town of Mary and her ſiſter Martha. 1. Joh. xi.
(It was that Mary which anointed the 2.
Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet
with her hair, whoſe brother Lazarus
was ſick.) Therefore his ſiſter ſent un- 3.
to him, ſaying, *Lord, behold, he whom thou loveſt, is ſick.* When Jeſus heard 4.
that, he ſaid, *This ſickneſs is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.*
Now Jeſus loved Martha, and her ſiſter, 5.
and Lazarus. When he had heard there- 6.
fore that he was ſick, he abode two
days ſtill in the ſame place where he
was. Then after that ſaith he to his 7.
diſciples, *Let us go into Judea again.*
His diſciples ſay unto him, *Maſter, the* 8.
Jews of late ſought to ſtone thee; and goeſt thou thither again? Jeſus anſwer- 9.

In the way. Joh. xi.

ed; *Are there not twelve hours in the* Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.
day? If any man walk in the day, he
ſtumbleth not, becauſe he ſeeth the light
10. *of this world. But if a man walk in the*
night, he ſtumbleth, becauſe there is no
11. *light in him.* Theſe things ſaid he: and
after that he ſaith unto them, *Our friend*
Lazarus ſleepeth; but I go that I may a-
12. *wake him out of ſleep.* Then ſaid his
diſciples, *Lord, if he ſleep, he ſhall*
13. *do well.* Howbeit Jeſus ſpake of his
death: but they thought that he had
14. ſpoken of taking of reſt in ſleep. Then
ſaid Jeſus unto them plainly, *Lazarus*
15. *is dead. And I am glad for your ſakes*
that I was not there (to the intent ye may
believe) nevertheleſs, let us go unto
16. *him.* Then ſaid Thomas, which is cal-
led Didymus, unto his fellow diſciples,
Let us alſo go, that we may dye with
Bethany. 17. *him.* Then when Jeſus came, he found
that he had lain in the grave four days
18. already. (Now Bethany was nigh un-
to Jeruſalem, about fifteen furlongs off:)
19. And many of the Jews came to Mar-
tha and Mary, to comfort them con-
20. cerning their Brother. Then Martha,
as ſoon as ſhe heard that Jeſus was com-
ing, went and met him: but Mary
21. ſat ſtill in the houſe. Then ſaid Mar-
tha unto Jeſus, *Lord, if thou hadſt been*
22. *here, my brother had not died. But I*
know, that even now whatſoever thou
wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.
23. Jeſus ſaith unto her, *Thy brother ſhall*
24. *riſe again.* Martha ſaith unto him, *I*

know

Anno Ætat. 33. Ministr. 4.

know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said unto her, I *am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.* *And whosoever liveth, and believeth in me, shall never die, Believest thou this?* She saith unto him, *Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ the Son of God, which should come into the world.* And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, *The Master is come, and calleth for thee.* As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him. Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him. The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, she goeth to the grave, to weep there. Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, *Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.* When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the Spirit, and was troubled, And said, *Where have ye laid him?* They say unto him, *Lord, come and see.* Jesus wept. Then said the Jews, Behold, how he loved him. And some of them said, *Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused*

Bethany.
25. Joh. xi.
26.
27.
28.
29.
30.
31.
32.
33.
34.
35.
36.
37.

Bethany. *that even this man ſhould not have died?* Anno
Joh. xi. 38. Jeſus therefore again groaning in him- Ætat. 33.
ſelf, cometh to the grave. It was a Miniſt. 4.
39. cave, and a ſtone lay upon it. Jeſus
ſaid, *Take ye away the ſtone.* Martha,
the ſiſter of him that was dead, ſaith
unto him, *Lord, by this time he ſtink-*
eth: for he hath been dead four days.
40. Jeſus ſaith unto her, *Said I not unto thee,*
that if thou wouldeſt believe, thou ſhouldeſt
41. *ſee the glory of God?* Then they took a-
way the ſtone from the place where the
dead was laid. And Jeſus lift up his eyes,
and ſaid, *Father, I thank thee that thou*
42. *haſt heard me. And I knew that thou hear-*
eſt me always: but becauſe of the people
which ſtand by, I ſaid it, that they may be-
43. *lieve that thou haſt ſent me.* And when
he thus had ſpoken, he cried with a loud
Miracle. 44. voice, *Lazarus, come forth.* And he
that was dead came forth, bound hand
and foot with grave clothes: and his
face was bound about with a napkin.
Jeſus ſaith unto them, Looſe him, and
let him go.
45. Then many of the Jews which came
to Mary, and had ſeen the things which
46. Jeſus did, believed on him. But ſome
of them went their ways to the Phari-
ſees, and told them what things Jeſus
47. had done. Then gathered the chief
Prieſts and the Phariſees a council, and
ſaid, *What do we? for this man doth*
48. *many miracles. If we let him thus alone,*
all men will believe on him; and the
Romans ſhall come and take away both

our

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

our place and nation. And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, *Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.* And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation; And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad. Then from that day forth they took council together for to put him to death. Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

Bethany. Joh. xi. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. Ephraim.

SECT. CXIV.

Jesus goes to Jerusalem, and foretels his death.

[a] Mat. xx. 17. [a] AND they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid.

The way to Jerusalem, Mar. x. 32.

[b] Mar. x. 32. Luk. xviii. 31. [b] And he took again * the twelve disciples apart in the way, * and began to tell them what things should happen to him, [c] saying, "Behold, we go up to "Jerusalem, * And all things that are "written by the prophets concerning the "son

17. Mat. xx. 17. 32. Mar. x. 32. 33. 31. Luk. xviii. 31.

The way to Jeruſalem.

" ſon of man ſhall be accompliſhed. Anno
" * [d] And the ſon of man ſhall be be- Ætat. 33.
Mat. xx. 18. " trayed unto the chief prieſts, and un- Minuſt. 4.
" to the Scribes, and they ſhall con- [d] Mar. x. 33.
19. " demn him to death, And ſhall deliver Luk. xviii.
" him to the Gentiles. * And they ſhall 32, 33.
Mar. x. 34. " mock him, And ſhall ſcourge him, Mar. x. 34.
" And ſhall ſpit upon him, And ſhall
Mat. xx. 19. " * crucifie him, And the third day he
Luk. xviii. 34. " ſhall riſe again, * and they underſtood
" none of theſe things; and this ſaying
" was hid from them, neither knew
" they the things which were ſpoken.

SECT. CXV.

The Sons of Zebedee deſire of Jeſus that one of them might ſit at his right, the other at his left hand in his kingdom. Jeſus reproves them for their ambition.

Mat. xx. 20. [e] THen came to [*Jeſus*] the mother [e] Mar. x. 35.
of Zebedee's children, with her
Mar. x. 35. ſons * James and John * worſhipping him,
Mat. xx. 20. and [f] deſiring a certain thing of him, [f] Mar. x.
21. * and he ſaid unto her, *What wilt thou?* 35, 36.
Mat. xx. 21. [g] * She ſaith unto him, *Grant that theſe* [g] Mar. x.
my two ſons may ſit, the one on thy 37, 38, 39.
right hand, and the other on thy left in
22. *thy kingdom.* But Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid, *Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I ſhall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptiſm that I am baptized with?* They ſay un-

to

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.
[h] Mat. xx. 23.

to him, *We are able.* [*h] And Jesus said unto them, *Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withall shall ye be baptized: But to sit on my right hand, and on my left is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared * of my father.*

The way to Jerusalem.
39. Mar. x.
23. Mat. xx.

[i] Mar. x. 41, 42.

[i] And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren * James and John. * But Jesus called them to him, and said, *Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.* [k] *But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister; And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

24.
41. Mar. x.
25. Mat. xx.
[k] Mat. xx. 26, 27, 28.
43. Mar. x.
44.
45.

SECT. CXVI.

Jesus going from Jericho: cureth blind Bartimeus.

Jericho.

[c] Mat. xx. 30, 31, 32. Luk. xviii. 35.
[b] Mar. x. 47, 48.

[a] AND they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the high way side, begging, And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant? [b] And they told

46. Mar. x.
36. Luk. xviii.
37.

Jericho. told him, that Jesus of Nazareth pas- Anno
Mar. x. 38. seth by. And he cried, saying, *Jesus,* Ætat. 33.
thou son of David, have mercy on me. Minist. 4.
39. And they which went before, rebuked
him, that he should hold his peace:
but he cried so much the more, *Thou*
Mar. x. 49. *son of David, have mercy on me.* [c] * And [c] Luk. xviii.
Jesus stood still, and commanded him 40.
to be called: and they call the blind
man, saying, unto him, *Be of good com-*
50. *fort, rise, he calleth thee.* And he cast-
ing away his garment, rose, and came
51. to Jesus. [d] And Jesus answered and said [d] Mat. xx.
unto him, *What wilt thou that I should* 32, 33.
do unto thee? The blind man said un- Luk. xviii.
to him, *Lord that I might receive my* 40, 41.
Mat. x. 34. *sight.* * So Jesus had compassion on
Luk. xviii. 42. [*him*] and touched [*his*] eyes: * [e] And [e] Mar. x. 52.
Jesus said unto him, *Receive thy sight:*
Miracle. *thy faith hath saved thee.* * [f] And [f] Mat. xx.
Mar. x. 52. immediately he received his sight, and 34.
Luk. xviii. 43. followed Jesus in the way, * Glorifying Luk. xviii.
God: and all the people when they 43.
saw it, gave praise to God.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Jericho. Luk. xix.

SECT. CXVII.

Jesus going through Jericho, Zacheus desirous to see him, climbs up a tree: Jesus calls him and goes to his house, at which the Jews murmur, because he was a Publican. The Parable of the King that went out of his Dominions to be crowned in another Country.

AND Jesus entred and passed thro' Jericho. And behold there was 1. Luk. xix. 2.
a man named Zacheus, which was the chief among the Publicans, and he was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who 3.
he was, and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. And he 4.
ran before and climbed up into a sycomore tree, to see him; for he was to pass that way. And when Jesus came 5.
to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said unto him, *Zacheus, make haste, and come down; for to day, I must abide at thy house.* And he made haste, 6.
and came down, and received him joyfully. And when they saw it, they all 7.
murmured, saying, that he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. And 8.
Zaccheus stood and said unto the Lord, *Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.* And Jesus said 9.

unto

Jericho. Luk. xix.

unto him, *This day is ſalvation come to* Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.
this houſe, for as much as he alſo is the
10. *ſon of Abraham. For the ſon of man is*
come to ſeek, and to ſave that which was
loſt.
11. " And as they heard theſe things, he
added, and ſpake a parable, becauſe he
was nigh to Jeruſalem, and becauſe they
thought that the kingdom of God ſhould
immediately appear. He ſaid there-
12. fore, " A certain nobleman went into a
" far country to receive for himſelf a
13. " kingdom, and to return. And he
" called his ten ſervants, and delivered
" them ten pounds, and ſaid unto them,
14. " Occupy till I come. But his Citi-
" zens hated him, and ſent a meſſage
" after him, ſaying, we will not have
15. " this man to reign over us. And it
" came to paſs, that when he was re-
" turned, having received the kingdom,
" then he commanded theſe ſervants to
" be called unto him, to whom he had
" given the money, that he might know
" how much every man had gained by
16. " trading. Then came the firſt, ſay-
" ing, Lord, thy pound hath gained
17. " ten pounds. And he ſaid unto him,
" Well done thou good ſervant; becauſe
" thou haſt been faithful in a very lit-
" tle, have thou authority over ten
18. " Cities. And the ſecond came, ſay-
" ing, Lord, thy pound hath gained
19. " five pounds. And he ſaid likewiſe
" to him, Be thou alſo over five Cities.
20. " And another came, ſaying, Lord, Be-
" hold,

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" hold, here is thy pound which I have Jericho.
" kept laid up in a napkin: For I fear- 21. Luk. xix.
" ed thee, because thou art an austere
" man: thou takest up that thou layest
" not down, and reapest that thou didst
" not sow. And he saith unto him, 22.
" Out of thine own mouth will I judge
" thee, thou wicked servant. Thou
" knewest that I was an austere man,
" taking up that I laid not down, and
" reaping that I did not sow: Where- 23.
" fore then gavest not thou my money
" into the bank, that at my coming I
" might have required mine own with
" usury? And he said unto them that 24.
" stood by, Take from him the pound,
" and give it to him that hath ten
" pounds. (And they said unto him, 25.
" Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I 26.
" say unto you, That unto every one
" which hath, shall be given: and from
" him that hath not, even that he hath
" shall be taken away from him. But 27.
" those mine enemies which would not
" that I should reign over them, bring
" hither, and slay them before me.

SECT. CXVIII.

Jesus goes to Bethany, where Mary anoints his feet.

AND the Jew's passover was nigh 55. Joh. xi.
at hand: and many went out of
the country up to Jerusalem before the
passover,

Jericho. Luk. xix.

unto him, *This day is ſalvation come to this houſe, for as much as he alſo is the* 10. *ſon of Abraham. For the ſon of man is come to ſeek, and to ſave that which was loſt.*

11. " And as they heard theſe things, he added, and ſpake a parable, becauſe he was nigh to Jeruſalem, and becauſe they thought that the kingdom of God ſhould immediately appear. He ſaid there-
12. fore, " A certain nobleman went into a
" far country to receive for himſelf a
13. " kingdom, and to return. And he
" called his ten ſervants, and delivered
" them ten pounds, and ſaid unto them,
14. " Occupy till I come. But his Citi-
" zens hated him, and ſent a meſſage
" after him, ſaying, we will not have
15. " this man to reign over us. And it
" came to paſs, that when he was re-
" turned, having received the kingdom,
" then he commanded theſe ſervants to
" be called unto him, to whom he had
" given the money, that he might know
" how much every man had gained by
16. " trading. Then came the firſt, ſay-
" ing, Lord, thy pound hath gained
17. " ten pounds. And he ſaid unto him,
" Well done thou good ſervant; becauſe
" thou haſt been faithful in a very lit-
" tle, have thou authority over ten
18. " Cities. And the ſecond came, ſay-
" ing, Lord, thy pound hath gained
19. " five pounds. And he ſaid likewiſe
" to him, Be thou alſo over five Cities.
20. " And another came, ſaying, Lord, Be-
" hold,

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" hold, here is thy pound which I have Jericho.
" kept laid up in a napkin: For I fear- 21. Luk. xix.
" ed thee, because thou art an austere
" man: thou takest up that thou layest
" not down, and reapest that thou didst
" not sow. And he saith unto him, 22.
" Out of thine own mouth will I judge
" thee, thou wicked servant. Thou
" knewest that I was an austere man,
" taking up that I laid not down, and
" reaping that I did not sow: Where- 23.
" fore then gavest not thou my money
" into the bank, that at my coming I
" might have required mine own with
" usury? And he said unto them that 24.
" stood by, Take from him the pound,
" and give it to him that hath ten
" pounds. (And they said unto him, 25.
" Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I 26.
" say unto you, That unto every one
" which hath, shall be given: and from
" him that hath not, even that he hath
" shall be taken away from him. But 27.
" those mine enemies which would not
" that I should reign over them, bring
" hither, and slay them before me.

SECT. CXVIII.

Jesus goes to Bethany, where Mary anoints his feet.

AND the Jew's passover was nigh 55. Joh. xi.
at hand: and many went out of
the country up to Jerusalem before the
passover,

Jericho. Joh. xi. 56. passover, to purifie themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, *What think ye that he will not come to* 57. *the feast?* Now both the chief Priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him. Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Joh. xii. 1. Then Jesus six days before the passo-
Bethany. ver, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he 2. raised from the dead. There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at 3. the table with him. Then took Mary a pound of Ointment, of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour 4. of the Ointment. Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's 5. son, which should betray him, *Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred* 6. *pence, and given to the poor?* This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. 7. Then said Jesus, *Let her alone; against the day of my burying hath she kept this.* 8. *For the poor always ye have with you;* 9. *but me ye have not always.* Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

dead. But the chief Priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death. Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus. Bethany. 10. Joh. xii. 11.

SECT. CXIX.

Jesus goes to Jerusalem riding on an Ass, and attended with Acclamations of the People, at which the Pharisees are inraged. He drives the Traders out of the Temple, Cures the Sick. The Boys follow him with Acclamations, to the great vexation of the Sanhedrim.

AND when Jesus had thus spoken. 28. Luk. xix.
* On the next day, * he went before ascending to Jerusalem. * * And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the Mount of Olives, [*Jesus*] sendeth forth two of his disciples, And saith unto them, "Go your way into the village "over against you; and as soon as ye "be entred into it * ye shall find an "ass tied, and a colt with her, * where- "on never man sat: loose him, and "bring him * hither. [b] And if any man "ask you why do ye loose him? thus "shall ye say unto him, Because the "Lord hath need of him. * And "straightway he will send him hither.
* All this was done that it might be fulfilled

12. Joh. xii. 28. Luk. xix.
[a] Mat. xxi. 1, 2. Luk. xix. 29, 30.
1. Mar. xi.
Bethphage.
2. Mar. xi.
2. Mat. xxi.
2. Mar. xi.
30. Luk. xix.
[b] Mat. xxi. 3. Mar. xi. 3.
31.
3. Mar. xi.
4. Mat. xxi.

Bethphage. filled which was ſpoken by the prophet [*Zachariah* ix. 9.] ſaying, *Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold thy King cometh unto thee, meek and ſitting upon an aſs, and a colt, the ſole of an aſs.* Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Mar. xi. 4. * [c] And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met: and they

[c] Mar. xxi. 6. Luk. xix. 32

Luk. xix. 33. looſe him. * [d] And as they were looſing the colt, the owners thereof ſaid unto

[d] Mar. xi. 5.

Mar. xi. 6. them, *Why looſe ye the colt?* * And they ſaid unto them even as Jeſus had commanded: * *The Lord hath need of*

Luk. xix. 34. Mar. xi. 6. *him.* * And they let them go. And

7. they brought the colt to Jeſus: * [e] And

[e] Mat. xxi. 7.

Luk. xix. 35. they caſt their garments upon the colt, and they ſet Jeſus thereon.

Mar. xi. 7.

Joh. xii. 12. * Much people that were come to the feaſt, when they heard that Jeſus was coming to Jeruſalem, took branches of

13. Palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, *Hoſanna, bleſſed is the king of Iſrael that cometh in the name*

14. *of the Lord.* And Jeſus when he had found a young aſs, ſat thereon; as

15. it is written, *Fear not, daughter of Sion. Behold thy king cometh, ſitting upon an*

16. *aſſes colt.* Theſe things underſtood not his diſciples at the firſt: but when Jeſus was glorified, then remembred they that theſe things were written of him, and that they had done theſe things unto him.

17. The People therefore that was with him when he called *Lazarus* out of his Grave, and raiſed him from the dead,

bare

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

bare record. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this Miracle. * And as he
[a] Mar. xi. 8. Luk. xix. 36. went * [a] a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed them in the way. * And when he was come nigh, even now at the de-
[b] Mat. xxi. 9. Mar. xi. 9. scent of the mount of Olives, [b] the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice, and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they
[c] Mar. xi. 9. Mat. xxi. 9. had seen, * [c] saying, *Hosanna to the son of David: * Blessed be the king that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.* * *Blessed be the kingdom of our father David that cometh in the name of the*
[d] Mat. xxi. 9. *Lord,* [d] *Hosanna in the highest.* * And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude, said unto him, *Master, rebuke thy disciples.* And he answered and said unto them, *I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.* * The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, *Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.*

The way to Jerusalem.

18. 36. Luk. xix. 8. Mat. xxi. 9. Mat. xxi. 38. Luk. xix. 39. Luk. xix. 40. 19. Joh. xii.

* And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, saying, "If thou hadst known, even thou, "at least in this thy day, the things "which belong unto thy peace! but now "they are hid from thine eyes. For the "days shall come upon thee, that thine "enemies shall cast a trench about thee, "and compass thee round, and keep thee

41. Luk. xix. 42. 43.

Near Jeruſa- lem. 44. " in on every ſide. And ſhall lay thee Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.
" even with the ground, and thy children
" within thee; and they ſhall not leave
" in thee one ſtone upon another, be-
" cauſe thou kneweſt not the time of
" thy viſitation.

Jeruſalem. * And when he was come into Jeru-
Mat. xxi. 10. ſalem, all the city was moved, ſaying,
11. *Who is this?* And the multitude ſaid,
This is Jeſus the prophet of Nazareth
Mar. xi. 15. *of Galilee.* * And they came to Jeru-
Temple. ſalem: [a] and Jeſus went into the tem- [a] Mat. xxi. 12. Luk. xix. 45.
ple, and began to caſt out them that
ſold and bought in the temple, and o-
verthrew the tables of the money chan-
gers, and the ſeats of them that ſold
Mar. xi. 16. doves; And would not ſuffer that any
man ſhould carry any veſſel through the
17. temple. And he taught, [b] ſaying unto [b] Mat. xxi. 13. Luk. xix. 46.
them, *Is it not written, my houſe ſhall be*
called of all nations the houſe of prayer?
but ye have made it a den of thieves.

Mat. xxi. 14. * And the blind and the lame came
to him in the temple, and he healed
15. them. And when the chief Prieſts and
Scribes ſaw the wonderful things that
he did, and the children crying in the
temple, and ſaying, *Hoſanna to the ſon*
of David; they were ſore diſpleaſed,
16. and ſaid unto him, *Heareſt thou what*
theſe ſay? And Jeſus ſaith unto them,
Yea, have ye never read, [Pſal. viii. 3.]
out of the mouth of babes and ſucklings
thou haſt perfected praiſe?

Luk. xix. 47. * And he taught daily in the temple,
but the chief Prieſts and the Scribes,

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

and the chief of the people sought to destroy him. And could not find what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

Temple. 48. Luk. xix.

SECT. CXX.

The curiosity of some Greeks to see Jesus. His Speech concerning his death, and the Incredibility of the Jews; which ended, he returns in the evening to Bethany.

Jerusalem.

AND there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast. The same came there- 20. Joh. xii.
fore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida 21.
of Galilee, and desired him, saying, *Sir, we would see Jesus.* Philip com- 22.
eth and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip told Jesus. And 23.
Jesus answered them, saying, "The "hour is come, that the son of man "should be glorified. Verily, verily I say 24.
"unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall "into the ground, and die, it abideth "alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth "much fruit. He that loveth his life, 25.
"shall lose it: and he that hateth his "life in this world, shall keep it unto "life eternal. If any man serve me, 26.
"let him follow me; and where I am, "there shall also my servant be: if "any man serve me, him will my Fa-"ther honour. Now is my soul trou- 27.

Jeruſalem. Joh. xii.

" bled; and what ſhall I ſay? Father
" ſave me from this hour: but for this
28." cauſe came I unto this hour. Father
" glorifie thy name. Then came there
a voice from heaven, ſaying, *I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.*
29. The people therefore that ſtood by, and heard it, ſaid, That *it thundred*: others ſaid, *An angel ſpake to him.*
30. Jeſus anſwered, and ſaid, " This voice
" came not becauſe of me, but for
31." your ſakes: Now is the judgment of
" this world: now ſhall the prince of
32." this world be caſt out. And I, if I
" be lifted up from the earth, will draw
33." all men to me. (This he ſaid, ſignifying what death he ſhould die.)
34. The people anſwered him, *We have heard out of the Law, that Chriſt abideth for ever: and how ſayeſt thou, The ſon of man muſt be liſt up? who is this*
35. *ſon of man?* Then Jeſus ſaid unto them,
" Yet a little while is the light with
" you: walk while ye have the light,
" leſt darkneſs come upon you: for he
" that walketh in darkneſs, knoweth
36." not whither he goeth. While ye
" have light, believe in the light, that
" ye may be the children of light.

Theſe things ſpake Jeſus and departed, and did hide himſelf from them.
37. But though he had done ſo many Miracles before them, yet they believed
38. not on him; That the ſaying of Eſaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he ſpake [liii. 1.] *Lord, who hath*

believed

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

believed our report, and to whom hath Jerusalem.
the arm of the Lord been revealed? Joh. xii.
Therefore they could not believe, be- 39.
cause that Esaias said again, *He hath* 40.
blinded their eyes, and hardned their hearts; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. These things said Esaias 41.
when he saw his glory, and spake of him. Nevertheless, among the chief 42.
rulers also, many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue. For they loved the 43.
praise of men more than the praise of God.

* And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, 11. Mar. xi.
and into the Temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things,
* Jesus cried, and said, "He that be- 44. Joh. xii.
" lieveth on me, believeth not on me,
" but on him that sent me. And he 45.
" that seeth me, seeth him that sent
" me. I am come a light into the 46.
" world, that whosoever believeth on
" me, should not abide in darkness,
" And if any man hear my words and 47.
" believe not, I judge him not; for I
" came not to judge the world, but to
" save the world. He that rejecteth 48.
" me, and receiveth not my words,
" hath one that judgeth him: the word
" that I have spoken, the same shall
" judge him in the last day. For I 49.
" have not spoken of my self; but the

Temple. Joh. xii. " Father which ſent me, he gave me a Anno
" commandment, what I ſhould ſay, Ætat. 33.
50. " and what I ſhould ſpeak. And I Miniſt. 4.
" know that his commandment is life
" everlaſting: whatſoever I ſpeak there-
" fore, even as the Father ſaid unto me
" ſo I ſpeak.

Bethany.
Mar. xi. 11. * And now the even-tide was come,
Mar. xxi. 17. * And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and lodged there
Mar. xi. 11. * with the twelve.

SECT. CXXI.

Returning to Jeruſalem.

Jeſus on his return from Bethany to Jeruſalem, curſes the barren Fig-tree, which is forthwith dried up. His diſcourſe concerning Faith, and pardoning of Offences.

Mar. xi. 12. } Mat. xxi. 18. } AND on the morrow * in the morning, * when they were come from
Mar. xi. 12. Bethany, * as he returned into the city,
Mat. xxi. 18.
Mar. xi. 13. [a] he hungred, * [b] And ſeeing a fig-tree [a] Mar. xi.
a far off, having leaves, he came, if hap- 12.
ly he might find any thing thereon: and [b] Mat. xxi.
when he came to it, he found nothing 19.
but leaves: for the time of figs was not
14. yet. And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid un-
to it, *No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever.* And his diſciples heard it,
Mat. xxi. 19. * And preſently the fig-tree withered
Mar. xi. 18. away. * And the Scribes and chief
Prieſts heard it, and ſought how they

might

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his Doctrine. And when even was come, he went out of the city. Near Jerusalem. 19.

And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots. 20. * And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away? 20. Mat. xxi. * And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, *Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.* 21. Mar. xi.

[c] Mat. xxi. 21, 22.

[c] And Jesus answering, saith unto them, 22.

" Have faith in God. For verily I say 23.
" unto you, that whosoever shall say
" unto this mountain, Be thou remo-
" ved, and be thou cast into the sea,
" and shall not doubt in his heart, but
" shall believe that those things which
" he saith shall come to pass, he shall
" have whatsoever he saith. There- 24.
" fore I say unto you, what things so-
" ever ye desire when ye pray, believe
" that ye receive them, and ye shall
" have them. And when ye stand, pray- 25.
" ing, forgive, if ye have ought against
" any: that your Father which is in
" heaven, may forgive you your tres-
" passes. But if you do not forgive,
" neither will your Father which is in
" heaven forgive your trespasses.

Jeruſalem. Anno Ætat 33. Miniſt. 4.

SECT. CXXII.

Jeſus ſilences the Sanhedrim, who asked by what authority he acted; and deſcribes their temper in ſeveral Parables. Their rage upon this account.

Mar. xi. 27. AND they come again to Jeruſalem;
Luk. xx. 1. [a] And it came to paſs that on one of thoſe days, as he taught the people
Temple. in the temple, and preached the goſpel, the chief Prieſts and the Scribes came upon him, with the elders. And ſpake
2. unto him, ſaying, *Tell us by what authority doſt thou theſe things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?*
Mar. xi. 29. * [b] And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid to them,
" I will alſo ask of you one queſtion,
" and anſwer me, and I will tell you
" by what authority I do theſe things.
Mat. xxi. 25. " * [c] The baptiſm of John whence was
Mar. xi. 30. " it? from heaven, or of men? * An-
31. " ſwer me. [d] And they reaſoned with
" themſelves, ſaying, *If we ſhall ſay, from heaven; he will ſay, Why then did*
Luk. xx. 6. *ye not believe him?* * [e] *But and if we ſay, Of men; all the people will ſtone us: for they be perſuaded that John was*
Mar. xi. 33. *a prophet.* * [f] And they anſwered and ſaid unto Jeſus, *We cannot tell.* And Jeſus anſwering, ſaith unto them, *Neither do I tell you by what authority I do theſe things.*

[a] Mat. xxi. 23. Mar. xi. 27, 28.
[b] Mat. xxi. 24. Luk. xx. 3.
[c] Mar. xi. 30. Luk. xx. 4.
[d] Mat. xxi. 25. Luk. xx. 5.
[e] Mat. xxi. 26. Mar. xi. 32.
[f] Mat. xxi. 27. Luk. xx. 7, 8.

* [g] And

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. [s] Luk. xx. 9.

Temple. 1. Mar. xii. 28. Mat. xxi.

[s] * And he began to speak unto them by parables. * " But what think you? A " certain man had two sons, and he came " to the first, and said, Son, go work " to day in my vineyard. He answer- 29. " ed and said, I will not: but after- " ward he repented, and went. And 30. " he came to the second, and said like- " wise. And he answered and said, I " go Sir, and went not. Whether of 31. " them twain did the will of his Fa- " ther? They say unto him, *The first.* Jesus saith unto them, " Verily I say " unto you, that the Publicans and the " Harlots go into the kingdom of God " before you. For John came unto you 32. " in the way of righteousness, and ye " believed him not, but the publicans " and harlots believed him. And ye " when ye had seen it, repented not af- " terward, that ye might believe him.

" Hear another parable: There was 33.
[h] Mar. xii. 1. Luk. xx. 9. " [h] a certain housholder which planted a " vineyard, and hedged it round about, " and digged a winepress in it, and " built a tower, and let it out to hus- " bandmen, and went into a far coun- " try * for a long time. * And when { 9. Luk. xx. 34. Mat. xxi. " the time of the fruit drew near, " * [i] He sent to the husbandmen a ser- 2. Mar. xii. [i] Mat. xxi. 34, 35, 36. Luk. xx. 10, 11, 12. " vant, that he might receive from the " husbandmen of the fruit of the vine- " yard. And they caught him and beat 3. " him, and sent him away empty. " And again he sent unto them another 4. " servant; and at him they cast stones, " and wounded him in the head,

" * and

Temple. " * and ſent him away empty * ſhame- Anno
Luk. xx. " fully handled. And again, he ſent Ætat. 33.
Mar. xii. " another, and him they killed: and Miniſt. 4.
" many others, beating ſome, and kil-
Luk. xx. 13. " ling ſome. * [k] Then ſaid the Lord of [k] Mat. xxi.
" the vineyard, What ſhall I do? I will 37.
" ſend my beloved ſon: it may be they Mar. xii. 6,
" will reverence him when they ſee 7.
14. " him. But when the husbandmen ſaw
" him, they reaſoned among themſelves,
" ſaying, This is the heir: come, let
" us kill him, that the inheritance may
Mat. xxi. 39. " be ours. * [a] And they caught him, [a] Mar. xii,
" and caſt him out of the vineyard, and 8, 9.
40. " ſlew him. When the Lord therefore of Luk. xx. 15,
" the vineyard cometh, what will he do 16.
41. " unto thoſe husbandmen? They ſay unto
him, *He will miſerably deſtroy thoſe wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto*
Luk. xx. 16. *other husbandmen, which ſhall render him*
the fruits in due ſeaſon. * And when
they heard it, they ſaid *God forbid.* And
17. } [*Jeſus*] beheld them and ſaid, * [b] " Did [b] Mar. xii,
Mat. xxi. 42. } " ye never read in the Scriptures, The 10, 11.
" ſtone which the builders rejected, the Luk. xx. 17.
" ſame is become the head of the cor-
" ner: This is the Lord's doing, and
43. " it is marvellous in our eyes. There-
" fore I ſay unto you, The kingdom of
" God ſhall be taken from you, and
" given to a nation bringing forth the
44. " fruits thereof; [c] And whoſoever ſhall [c] Luk. xx.
" fall on this ſtone ſhall be broken: 18,
" but on whomſoever it ſhall fall it
" will grind him to powder.

* [d] And

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. [d] Mat. xxi. 46. Mar. xii. 12.

*[d] And the chief Priests and the Scribes sought to lay hands on him the same hour; and they feared the people, * because they took him for a prophet. And when the chief Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived * that he had spoken this parable against them. * And they left him, and went their way.

Temple. 19. Luk. xx. 46. Mat. xxi. 45. 11. Luk. xx. 12. Mar. xii.

* And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

1. Mat. xxii.

" The kingdom of heaven is like unto 2.
" a certain king which made a marriage
" for his son, And sent forth his ser- 3.
" vants to call them that were bidden
" to the wedding: and they would not
" come. Again he sent forth other ser- 4.
" vants, saying, Tell them which are
" bidden, Behold I have prepared my
" dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are
" killed, and all things are ready:
" come unto the marriage. But they 5.
" made light of it, and went their ways,
" one to his farm, another to his mer-
" chandize: And the remnant took his 6.
" servants, and intreated them spitefully,
" ly, and slew them. But when the 7. Mat. xxii.
" king heard thereof, he was wroth:
" and he sent forth his armies, and de-
" stroyed those murtherers, and burnt
" up their city. Then saith he to his 8.
" servants, The wedding is ready, but
" they which were bidden were not
" worthy. Go ye therefore into the 9.
" highways, and as many as ye shall
" find, bid to the marriage. So those 10.

" servants

Temple. Mat. xxii. " ſervants went out into the highways, " and gathered together all as many as " they found, both bad and good: and " the wedding was furniſhed with " gueſts. And when the king came in " to ſee the gueſts, he ſaw there a man " which had not on a wedding garment: " And he ſaith unto him, Friend, how " comeſt thou in hither, not having a " wedding garment? And he was " ſpeechleſs. Then ſaid the king to " the ſervant, Bind him hand and foot, " and take him away, and caſt him in- " to outer darkneſs: there ſhall be " weeping and gnaſhing of teeth. For " many are called, but few are choſen.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

SECT. CXXIII.

Jeruſalem. *The Jews ſuborn Men to find out Jeſus's opinion concerning paying Tribute to the Romans, whom he ſilences by a wary anſwer.*

Mat. xxii. 15. THen went the Phariſees and took counſel how they might intangle
Luk. xx. 20. him in his talk. [a] * And they watched him, and ſent forth ſpies, which ſhould
Mar. xii. 13. feign themſelves juſt men, * certain of the Phariſees, and of the Herodians,
Luk. xx. 20. * that they might take hold of his words, that ſo they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the
Mar. xii. 14. governour. * And when they were come,
Mat. xxii. 16. they ſay unto him, [b] *Maſter, * we know that

[a] Mat. xxii. 16. Mar. xii. 13.

[b] Mar. xii. 14. Luk. xx. 21, 22.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

*that thou art true, and teacheſt the way of God in truth, neither careſt thou for any man: for thou regardeſt not the perſon of men. Tell us therefore, what thinkeſt thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæſar, or not? * Shall we give, or ſhall we not give?* * But he perceived their craftineſs, and ſaid unto them, *Why tempt ye me, * ye hypocrites?* [d] *Shew me the tribute money.* And they brought him a penny. And he ſaith unto them, *Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription?* They ſay unto him, *Cæſars.* Then ſaith he unto them, *Render therefore unto Cæſar the things which are Cæſars, and unto God the things that are Gods.* * And they could not take hold of his words before the people. [e] And they marvelled at his anſwer, and held their peace, * and left him and went their way.

Jeruſalem. Mar. xii.
14.
15.
Mat. xxii. 18. Mar. xii. 15.
23. Luk. xx.
[d] Mar. xii. 15, 16, 17. Luk. xx. 24, 25.
Mar. xxii. 18, 19.
20.
21.
26. Luk. xx.
[e] Mat. xxii. 22. Mar. xii. 17.
22. Mat. xxii.

SECT. CXXIV.

Jeſus ſilences the Sadducees, who put captious queſtions to him concerning the reſurrection. He anſwers the Lawyer who asked which was the greateſt Commandment? And ſilences the Phariſees, by putting to them a queſtion concerning the Meſſiah.

[f] Mat. xxii. 23, 24. Mar. xii. 18, 19.

THE ſame day came to him * [f] certain of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any reſurrection) and asked him,

23. Mat. xxii. 27. Luk. xx.

Jerusalem. him, saying, *Master, Moses wrote unto* Anno
Luk. xx. 28. *us, If any man's brother die, having a* Ætat. 33.
wife, and he die without children, that Minist. 4.
his brother should take his wife, and raise
Mat. xxii. 25. *seed to his brother.* *[b] *Now there were* [b] Mar. xii. 20
with us seven brethren, and the first Luk. xx. 29.
when he had married a wife, deceased,
and having no issue, left his wife unto
Mar. 12. 21. *his brother.* *[c] *And the second took her,* [c] Mat. xxii.
and died, neither left he any seed. And 26.
Luk. xx. 31. *the third likewise.* *[d] *And in like man-* Luk. xx. 30.
[d] Mar. xii.
ner the seven also; and they left no 22.
32. *children, and died. Last of all the wo-* Mat. xx. 27,
Mar. xii. 23. *man died also.* *[e] *In the resurrection* 28, 29.
[e] Luk. xx.
therefore, when they shall rise, whose 33, 34.
wife shall she be of them? for the seven
24. *had her to wife.* And Jesus answering,
said unto them, "Do ye not therefore
" err, because ye know not the scrip-
" tures, neither the power of God?
Luk. xx. 34. " * The children of this world marry,
35. " and are given in marriage. [f] But they [f] Mat. xxii.
" which shall be accounted worthy to 30.
Mar. xii. 25.
" obtain that world, and the resurrecti-
" on from the dead, neither marry, nor
36. " are given in marriage; neither can
" they die any more; for they are equal
" unto the angels, and are the children
" of God, being the children of the
Mar. xii. 26, " resurrection. *[g] And as touching the [g] Mat. xxii.
" dead, that they rise, have ye not read 31, 32.
" in the book of Moses, how in the Luk. xx.
" bush God spake unto him, saying, 37, 38.
" I am the God of Abraham, and the
" God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.
27. " He is not the God of the dead, but
" the

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" the God of the living. * For all live Jerusalem. 38. Luk. xx.
" unto him. * Ye therefore do great- 38. Luk. xx.
" ly err.
* And when the multitude heard this 27. Mar. xii. 33. Mat. xxii.
they were astonished at his doctrine.
But when the Pharisees had heard that 34.
he had put the Sadducees to silence, they
were gathered together. Then one of 35.
them which was a Lawyer * having 28. Mar. xii.
heard them reasoning together, and per-
ceiving that he had answered well,
[a] Mar. xii. 28. * [a] asked him a question, tempting him, 35. Mat. xxii.
and saying, *Master, which is the great* 36.
commandment in the law? Jesus said 37.
unto him, " * The first of all the com- 29. Mar. xii.
" mandments is, Hear, O Israel, the
[b] Mat. xxii. 37. " Lord our God is one Lord; [b] And 30.
" thou shalt love the Lord thy God
" with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,
" and with all thy mind, and with all thy
" strength: * [c] This is the first and great 38. Mat. xxii.
[c] Mar. xii. 30. " commandment. And the second is like 39.
" unto it, * namely this, [d] Thou shalt 31. Mar. xii.
[d] Mat. xxii. 39. " love thy neighbour as thy self: there
" is none other commandment greater
" than these. * On these two com- 40. Mat. xxii.
" mandments hang all the law and the
" prophets. * [e] And the Scribe said 32. Mar. xii.
[e] Luk. xx. 39. unto him, *Well master, thou hast said*
the truth: for there is one God, and
there is none other but he. And to love 34.
him with all the heart, and with all the
understanding, and with all the soul, and
with all the strength, and to love his
neighbour as himself, is more than all
whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

And

Jeruſalem. And when Jeſus ſaw that he anſwered Anno
Mar. xii. 34. diſcreetly, he ſaid unto him, *Thou art* Ætat. 33.
not far from the kingdom of God. And Miniſt. 4.
no man after that, durſt ask him any
Temple. queſtion.

Mat. xxii. 41. * While the Phariſees were gathered
Mar. xii. 35. together, Jeſus asked them, * while he
Mat. xxii. 42. taught in the temple, * ſaying, "What
Mar. xii. 35. " think ye of Chriſt? * ª How ſay the ª Mat. xxii.
" Scribes that Chriſt is the ſon of Da- 42, 43, 44,
36. " vid? For David himſelf ſaid by the 45.
" Holy Ghoſt, [*Pſal.* cx. 1.] *The Lord* Luk. xx. 41,
" *ſaid to my Lord, ſit thou on my right* 42, 43, 44.
" *hand, till I make thine enemies thy*
37. " *foot-ſtool.* David therefore himſelf
" calleth him Lord; and whence is he
" then his ſon?

And the common people heard him
Mat. xxii. 46. gladly, * And no man was able to an-
ſwer him a word; ᵇ neither durſt any ᵇ Luk. xx.
man (from that day forth) ask him any 40.
more queſtions.

SECT. CXXV.

Jeſus vehemently inveighs againſt the Vices of the Phariſees and Lawyers.

Luk. xx. 45. THen in the audience of all the people
Mat. xxiii. 1. * ᶜ ſpake Jeſus to the multitude, ᶜ Mar. xii.
2. and to his diſciples, ſaying, "The Scribes 38.
3. " and Phariſees ſit in Moſes ſeat. All Luk. xx. 45.
" therefore whatſoever they bid you ob-
" ſerve, that obſerve and do: but do
" not ye after their works; for they
" ſay

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.
[b] Luk. xx. 46.

" say, and do not. * [b] Beware of the Scribes. * For they bind heavy burthens, and grievous to be born, and lay them on men's shoulders: but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: they make broad their (†) Phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments; * they desire to walk in long robes, * and love salutations in the market places; [c] and the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts; * and to be called of men Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your master, even Christ, and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your father which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, even Christ. But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased; And he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted. But wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites; for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in your selves, neither suffer ye them that are entring to

38. Mar. xii.
4. Mat. xxiii.
5.
46. Luk. xx.
38. Mar. xii.
7. Mar. xxiii.
8.
9.
10.
11.
12.
13.

[c] Mat. xxiii. 6, 7. Luk. xx. 46.

(†) *Phylacteries* was a Parchment in which was writ the Commandments of God, which the Pharisees for Ostentation sake used to wear on their Foreheads, or tyed about their Arms.

Jeruſalem. Mat. xxiii. 14. " go in. Wo unto you Scribes and " Phariſees, Hypocrites, [d] for ye de- " vour widows houſes, and for a pre- " tence make long prayer: therefore " ye ſhall receive the greater damna- 15. " tion. Wo unto you Scribes and Pha- " riſees, Hypocrites; for ye compaſs " ſea and land to make one proſelyte: " and when he is made, ye make him " twofold more the child of hell than 16. " your ſelves. Wo unto you, ye blind " guides, which ſay, Whoſoever ſhall " ſwear by the temple, it is nothing: " but whoſoever ſhall ſwear by the gold 17. " of the temple, he is a debtor. Ye fools " and blind: for whether is greater, " the gold or the temple that ſanctifi- 18. " eth the gold? And whoſoever ſhall " ſwear by the altar, it is nothing: but " whoſoever ſweareth by the gift that 19. " is upon it, he is guilty. Ye fools " and blind, for whether is greater, the " gift, or the altar that ſanctifieth the 20. " gift? Whoſo therefore ſhall ſwear " by the altar, ſweareth by it, and by 21. " all things thereon. And whoſo ſhall " ſwear by the temple, ſweareth by it, " and by him that dwelleth therein. 22. " And he that ſhall ſwear by heaven, " ſweareth by the throne of God, and 23. " by him that ſitteth thereon. Wo un- " to you Scribes and Phariſees, Hypo- " crites; for ye pay tithes of mint and " anice, and cummin, and have omit- " ted the weightier matters of the law, " judgment, mercy, and faith: theſe " ought

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

[d] Mar. xii. 40. Luk. xx. 47.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

" ought ye to have done, and not to Jeruſalem.
" leave the other undone. Ye blind 24. Mat. xxiii.
" guides, which ſtrain at a gnat, and
" ſwallow a camel. Wo unto you 25.
" Scribes and Phariſees, Hypocrites;
" for ye make clean the outſide of the
" cup, and the platter, but within
" they are full of extortion and exceſs.
" Thou blind Phariſee, cleanſe firſt that 26.
" which is within the cup and platter,
" that the outſide of them may be clean
" alſo. Wo unto you Scribes and Pha- 27.
" riſees, Hypocrites; for ye are like
" unto whited ſepulchres, which indeed
" appear beautiful outward, but are
" within full of dead men's bones, and
" of all uncleaneſs. Even ſo ye alſo 28.
" outwardly appear righteous unto
" men, but within ye are full of hypo-
" criſy and iniquity. Wo unto you 29.
" Scribes and Phariſees, Hypocrites;
" becauſe ye build the tombs of the
" prophets, and garniſh the ſepulchres
" of the righteous, And ſay, If we had 30.
" been in the days of our fathers, we
" would not have been partakers with
" them in the blood of the Prophets.
" Wherefore ye be witneſſes unto your 31.
" ſelves, that ye are the children of
" them which killed the Prophets.
" Fill ye up then the meaſure of your 32.
" fathers. Ye ſerpents, ye generation 33.
" of vipers, how can ye eſcape the
" damnation of hell? Wherefore be- 34.
" hold, I ſend unto you prophets, and
" wiſemen, and ſcribes; and ſome of

Jeruſalem. Mat. xxiii.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

“ them ſhall ye ſcourge in your ſyna-
“ gogues, and perſecute them from
35. “ city to city: That upon you may
“ come all the righteous blood ſhed
“ upon the earth, from the blood of
“ righteous Abel unto the blood of Za-
“ charias, ſon of Barachias, whom ye
“ ſlew between the temple and the al-
36. “ tar. Verily I ſay unto you, all theſe
“ things ſhall come upon this genera-
37. “ tion. O Jeruſalem, Jeruſalem, thou
“ that killeſt the prophets, and ſtoneſt
“ them which are ſent unto thee, how
“ often would I have gathered thy chil-
“ dren together, even as a hen gathereth
“ her chickens under her wings, and ye
38. “ would not! Behold, your houſe is
39. “ left unto you deſolate. For I ſay un-
“ to you, Ye ſhall not ſee me hence-
“ forth, till ye ſhall ſay, Bleſſed is he
“ that cometh in the name of the
“ Lord.

SECT. CXXVI.

Temple.

Jeſus commends the liberality of the poor Widow Woman.

Mar. xii. 41. [a] AND Jeſus ſat over againſt the treaſury, and beheld how the people caſt money into the treaſury: and many that were rich caſt in much.
42. And there came a certain poor widow, and ſhe threw in two mites, which make
43. a farthing. And he called unto him

[a] Luk. xxi. 1, 2.

his

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. [b]Luk.xxi.3. his disciples, and saith unto them, Temple. Mar. xii.
" [b] Verily I say unto you, that this poor
" widow hath cast more in, than all
" they which have cast into the treasu-
[c]Mar. xii. 44. " ry. * [c] For all these have of their 4. Luk. xxi.
" abundance cast in unto the offerings
" of God: but she of her penury hath
" cast in all the living that she had.

SECT. CXXVII.

Christ foretels the destruction of Jerusalem, and the punishments that should be inflicted on the Jews at his coming. He exhorts his Disciples to vigilance, that they may not be unprovided at his coming. The Parable of the ten Virgins. Of the Man that went into a far country, and left Talents with his Servants to be improved. The day of Judgment described. Jerusalem,

[d]Mar. xiii. 1. [d] AND Jesus went out, and depar- 1. Mat. xxiv.
ted from the temple, and his
disciples came to him to shew the build-
[e]Mat. xxiv. 1, 2. Luk. xxi. 5, 6. ings of the temple. * [e] One of his dis- 1. Mar. xiii.
ciples saith unto him, *Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here.* And Jesus answering, said unto 2.
him, *Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.*

Mount of Olives.

[f] And as he ſat upon the Mount of
3. Olives, over againſt the temple, Peter,
and James, and John, and Andrew asked
Mat. xxiv. 3. him privately, * [g] *Tell us when ſhall*
theſe things be? and what ſhall be the
4. *ſign of thy coming, and of the end of the*
world? And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto them, " Take heed that no man
5. " deceive you. For many ſhall come in
" my name, ſaying, I am Chriſt; and ſhall
Luk. xxi. 8. " deceive many. * And the time draw-
" eth near: go ye not therefore after
Mar. xiii. 7. " them. * [h] And when ye ſhall hear of
" wars, and rumors of wars, be ye not
" troubled: for ſuch things muſt needs
" be, but the end ſhall not be yet.
Luk. xxi. 10. * [i] Then ſaid he unto them, Na-
" tion ſhall riſe againſt nation, and
11. " kingdom againſt kingdom: And great
" earthquakes ſhall be in divers places,
" and famines and peſtilences, and fear-
" ful ſights, and great ſigns ſhall there
Mat. xxiv. 8. Mar. xiii. 9. " be from heaven. * [k] All theſe are
" the beginnings of ſorrows. * But
Luk. xxi. 12. " take heed to your ſelves: * But be-
" fore all theſe they ſhall lay hands on
Mar. xiii. 9. " you, and perſecute you; * [l] for they
" ſhall deliver you up to councils; and
" in the ſynagogues ye ſhall be beaten,
" and ye ſhall be brought before rulers
" and kings for my ſake, for a teſti-
Mat. xxiv. 9. " mony againſt them; * and ye ſhall
" be hated of all nations for my names
Mar. xiii. 10. " ſake. * And the goſpel muſt firſt be
11. " publiſhed among all nations. But
" when they ſhall lead you, and deliver
" you

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

[f] Mat. xxiv. 3.

[g] Mar. xiii. 4, 5, 6. Luk. xxi. 7, 8.

[h] Mat xxiv. 6. Luk. xxi. 9.

[i] Mat. xxiv. 7. Mar. xiii. 8.

[k] Mar. xiii. 8.

[l] Mat. xxiv. 9. Luk. xxi. 12, 13.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" you up, [m] take no thought before. Mount of
" hand what ye shall speak, neither do Olives.
" ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall
" be given you in that hour, that speak
" ye: * For I will give you a mouth 15. Luk. xxi.
" and wisdom, which all your adver-
" saries shall not be able to gainsay,
" nor resist, * for it is not ye that speak, 11. Mar. xiii.
" but the holy Ghost.
* " And there shall many be offend- 10. Mat. xxiv.
" ed, and shall betray one another,
" and shall hate one another. * [n] Now 12. Mar xiii.
" the brother shall betray the brother
" to death, and the father the son: and
" children shall rise up against their
" parents, and shall cause them to be
" put to death. And ye shall be hated 13.
" of all men for my name sake. * But 18. Luk. xxi.
" there shall not an hair of your head
" perish, * [o] But he that shall endure 13. Mar. xiii.
" to the end, the same shall be
" saved.
" * And many false prophets shall rise, 11. Mat. xxiv.
" and shall deceive many. And because
" iniquity shall abound, the love of
" many shall wax cold. But he that 13.
" shall endure to the end, the same shall
" be saved. And this gospel of the 14.
" kingdom shall be preached in all the
" world, for a witness unto all nations,
" and then shall the end come. [p] When 15.
" ye therefore shall see the abomination
" of desolation, spoken of by Daniel
" the prophet, stand in the holy place,
" * And when ye shall see Jerusalem 20. Luk. xxi
" compassed with armies, then know

[m] Luk. xxi. 14.
[n] Luk. xxi. 16, 17.
[o] Luk. xxi. 19.
[p] Mar. xiii. 14.

Mount of Olives.

Mar. xiii. 14. " that the deſolation thereof is nigh, Anno
" * [p] (let him that readeth underſtand) Ætat. 33.
" then let them that be in Judea, flee Miniſt. 4.
15. " to the mountains: And let him that [p] Mat. xxiv.
" is on the houſe top not go down in- 15, 16, 17.
" to the houſe, neither enter therein to Luk. xxi.
" take any thing out of his houſe. 21.

Luk. xxi. 21. " * And let them which are in the midſt
Mat. xxiv. 18. " of it depart out. * [q] Neither let him [q] Mar. xiii.
" which is in the field, return back to 16.
Luk. xxi. 22. " take his clothes. * For theſe be the Luk. xxi. 21.
" days of vengeance, that all things
" which are written may be fulfilled.
23. " [r] But wo unto them that are with [r] Mat. xxiv.
" child, and to them that give ſuck 19.
Mat. xxiv. 20. " in thoſe days. * [s] But pray ye that Mar. xiii.
" your flight be not in the winter, nei- 17.
Mat. xiii. 19. " ther on the ſabbath day. * [t] For in [s] Mar. xiii.
" thoſe days ſhall be affliction, ſuch as 18.
" was not from the beginning of the [t] Mat. xxiv.
" creation which God created, unto 21.
Luk. xxi. 24. " this time, neither ſhall be. * And Luk. xxi. 23.
" they ſhall fall by the edge of the
" ſword, and ſhall be led away captive
" into all nations; and Jeruſalem ſhall
" be trodden down of the Gentiles, un-
" til the times of the Gentiles be ful-
Mar. xiii. 20. " filled. * [u] And except that the Lord [u] Mat. xxiv.
" had ſhortned thoſe days, no fleſh 22, 23.
" ſhould be ſaved: but for the elects
" ſake whom he hath choſen, he hath
21. " ſhortned the days. And then, if any
" ſhall ſay to you, Lo, here is Chriſt,
" or lo, he is there; believe him not.
Mat. xxiv. 24. " * [w] For there ſhall ariſe falſe Chriſts, [w] Mar. xiii.
" and falſe Prophets, and ſhall ſhew 22.

" great

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" great signs and wonders, insomuch Mount of
" that (if it were possible) they shall Olives.
" deceive the very elect. * [x] But take 23. Mar. xiii.
" ye heed: behold I have foretold you
" all things. * Wherefore if they shall 26. Mat. xxiv.
" say unto you, Behold, he is in the
" desart, go not forth: behold, he is
" in the secret chambers, believe it not.
" For as the lightning cometh out of 27.
" the east, and shineth even unto the
" west: so shall also the coming of the
" son of man be. For wheresoever the 28.
" carcase is, there will the eagles be ga-
" thered together.
" * [a] But in those days, after that 24. Mar. xiii.
" tribulation, the sun shall be darkned,
" and the moon shall not give her light:
" And the stars of heaven shall fall, 25.
" and the powers that are in heaven
" shall be shaken. * And there shall be 25. Luk. xxv.
" signs in the sun, and in the moon, and
" in the stars; and upon the earth di-
" stress of nations, with perplexity,
" the sea and the waves roaring; mens 26.
" hearts failing them for fear, and for
" looking after those things which are
" coming on the earth: for the powers
" of heaven shall be shaken. * And 30. Mat. xxiv.
" then shall appear the sign of the son
" of man in heaven: and then shall all
" the tribes of the earth mourn, [b] and
" they shall see the son of man coming
" in the clouds of heaven, with pow-
" er and great glory. * [c] And then 27. Mar. xiii.
" shall he send his angels, and shall ga-
" ther together his elect from the four
" winds

[x] Mat. xxiv. 25.
[a] Mat. xxiv. 29.
[b] Mar. xiii. 26. Luk. xxi. 27.
[c] Mat. xxiv. 31.

Mount of Olives. Mar. xiii. Luk. xxi.

" winds, from the uttermoſt part of
" the earth to the uttermoſt part of
" heaven. * And when theſe things be-
" gin to come to paſs, then look up,
" and lift up your heads; for your re-
" demption draweth nigh. And he
" ſpake to them a parable, *[a] Now
" learn a parable of the fig-tree: *[b] And
" all the trees; When they now ſhoot
" forth, ye ſee and know of your own
" ſelves, that ſummer is nigh at hand.
" So likewiſe ye when ye ſee theſe
" things come to paſs, know ye that
" the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.
" *[c] Verily I ſay unto you, This gene-
" ration ſhall not paſs, till all theſe
" things be fulfilled. Heaven and
" earth ſhall paſs away, but my words
" ſhall not paſs away. *[d] But of that
" day and that hour knoweth no man,
" no not the angels which are in hea-
" ven, neither the ſon, * but the father
" only.
" * And take heed to your ſelves,
" leſt at any time your hearts be over-
" charged with ſurfeiting, and drunken-
" neſs, and cares of this life, and ſo
" that day come upon you unawares.
" For as a ſnare ſhall it come on all
" them that dwell on the face of
" the whole earth. Watch ye there-
" fore, and pray always that ye may be
" accounted worthy to eſcape all theſe
" things that ſhall come to paſs, and to
" ſtand before the ſon of man. *[e] Watch
" therefore, for ye know not what hour the
" Lord

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

[a] Mar. xiii. 28. Luk. xxi. 29.
[b] Mat. xxi. 32, 33. Mar. xiii. 28, 29.
[c] Mar. xiii. 30, 31. Luk. xxi. 32, 33.
[d] Mat. xxiv. 36.
[e] Mar. xiii. 33.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" Lord doth come. But as the days of Mount of
" Noe were, so shall also the coming Olives.
" of the son of man be. For as in the 37. Mar. xxiv.
" days that were before the flood, they 38.
" were eating and drinking, marrying
" and giving in marriage, until the day
" that Noe entred into the ark, and 39.
" knew not until the floud came, and
" took them all away; so shall also
" the coming of the son of man be.
" Then shall two be in the field, the 40.
" one shall be taken, and the other
" left. Two women shall be grinding 41.
" at the mill, the one shall be taken,
" and the other left. But know this, 43.
" that if the good man of the house
" had known in what watch the thief
" would come, he would have watch-
" ed, and would not have suffered his
" house to be broken up. Therefore be 44.
" ye also ready: for in such an hour
" as you think not, the son of man
" cometh. * For the son of man is as 34. Mar. xiii.
" a man taking a far journey, who left
" his house, and gave authority to his
" servants, and to every man his work,
" and commanded the porter to watch.
" * Who then is a faithful and wise 45. Mar. xxiv.
" servant, whom his Lord hath made
" ruler over his houshold, to give them
" meat in due season? Blessed is that 46.
" servant, whom his Lord when he
" cometh, shall find so doing. Verily, 47.
" I say unto you, that he shall make
" him ruler over all his goods. But 48.
" and if that evil servant shall say in

" his

Mount of Olives. Mat. xxvi. 49. " his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming, And ſhall begin to ſmite his fellow ſervants, and to eat and drink with
50. " the drunken: The Lord of that ſervant ſhall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour
51. " that he is not aware of; And ſhall cut him aſunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of
Mat. xiii. 35. " teeth. * Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the maſter of the houſe cometh; at even, or at midnight, or at the cock crowing, or in
Mar. xiii. 36. " the morning.) Leſt coming ſuddenly, he find you ſleeping. And what I ſay unto you, I ſay unto all, watch.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Mat. xxv. 1. " * Then ſhall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten vigins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet
2. " the Bridegroom, And five of them were wiſe, and five were fooliſh.
3. " They that were fooliſh took their lamps, and took no oil with them.
4. " But the wiſe took oil in their veſſels
5. " with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all ſlumbered and
6. " ſlept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.
7. " Then all thoſe virgins aroſe, and
8. " trimmed their lamps. And the fooliſh ſaid unto the wiſe, Give us of your oil, for our lamps are gone out.
9. " But the wiſe anſwered, ſaying, Not

" ſo;

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" so; lest there be not enough for us Mount of
" and you: but go ye rather to them Olives.
" that sell, and buy for your selves. Mat. xxv.
" And while they went to buy, the 10.
" bridegroom came, and they that were
" ready, went in with him to the mar-
" riage, and the door was shut. After- 11.
" ward came also the other virgins,
" saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But 12.
" he answered and said, Verily I say
" unto you, I know you not. Watch 13.
" therefore, for ye know neither the
" day nor the hour, wherein the son of
" man cometh.
" For the kingdom of heaven is as a 14.
" man travelling into a far countrey,
" who called his own servants, and de-
" livered unto them his goods: And 15.
" unto one he gave five talents, to ano-
" ther two; and to another one, and
" to every man according to his several
" ability, and straightway took his
" journey. Then he that had received 16.
" the five talents, went and traded with
" the same, and made them other five
" talents. And likewise he that had 17.
" received two, he also gained other
" two. But he that had received one, 18.
" went and digged in the earth, and
" hid his Lord's money. After a long 19.
" time, the Lord of those servants com-
" eth, and reckoneth with them. And so 20.
" he that had received five talents, came
" and brought other five talents, say-
" ing, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me
" five talents: behold, I have gained

" besides

Mount of Olives. Mat. XXV. 21. " besides them five talents more. His " Lord said unto him, well done, thou " good and faithful servant; thou hast " been faithful over a few things, I " will make thee ruler over many " things: enter thou into the joy of
22. " thy Lord. He also that had received " two talents, came and said, Lord, " thou deliveredst unto me two talents: " behold, I have gained two other ta-
23. " lents besides them. His Lord said " unto him, Well done, good and " faithful servant; thou hast been faith- " ful over a few things, I will make " thee ruler over many things: enter
24. " thou into the joy of thy Lord. Then " he which had received the one talent, " came and said, Lord, I know thee " that thou art an hard man, reaping " where thou hast not sown, and ga- " thering where thou hast not strawed.
25. " And I was afraid, and went and hid " thy talent in the earth: lo, there
26. " thou hast that is thine. His Lord " answered and said unto him, Thou " wicked and slothful servant, thou " knewest that I reap where I sowed " not, and gather where I have not
27. " strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to " have put my money to the exchangers, " and then at my coming I should " have received mine own with usury.
28. " Take therefore the talent from him, " and give unto him which hath
29. " ten talents. For unto every one that " hath, shall be given, and he shall

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

"have

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" have abundance: but from him that Mount of
" hath not, shall be taken away even Olives.
" that which he hath. And cast ye the 30. Mat. xxv.
" unprofitable servant into outer dark-
" ness: there shall be weeping and
" gnashing of teeth.
" When the son of man shall come in 31.
" his glory, and all the holy angels
" with him, then shall he sit upon the
" throne of his glory. And before him 32.
" shall be gathered all nations; and he
" shall separate them one from another,
" as a shepherd divideth his sheep from
" the Goats: And he shall set the sheep 33.
" on his right hand, but the goats on
" the left. Then shall the king say 34.
" unto them on his right hand, Come
" ye blessed of my Father inherit the
" kingdom prepared for you from the
" foundation of the world. For I was 35.
" an hungred, and ye gave me meat:
" I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink:
" I was a stranger, and ye took me in:
" naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, 36.
" and ye visited me: I was in prison,
" and ye came unto me.
" Then shall the righteous answer 37.
" him, saying, Lord, when saw we
" thee an hungred, and fed thee? or
" thirsty, and gave thee drink? When 38.
" saw we thee a stranger, and took
" thee in? or naked, and clothed
" thee? Or when saw we thee sick or 39.
" in prison, and came unto thee? And 40.
" the king shall answer, and say unto
" them, Verily I say unto you, In as

" much

Mount of Olives. Mat. xxv.

" much as ye have done it unto one of Anno
" the leaſt of theſe my brethren, ye have Ætat. 33.
" done it unto me. Miniſt. 4.

41. " Then ſhall he ſay alſo unto them
" on the left hand, Depart from me,
" ye curſed, into everlaſting fire, pre-
" pared for the devil and his angels.
42. " For I was an hungred, and ye gave
" me no meat: I was thirſty, and ye
43. " gave me no drink: I was a ſtranger,
" and ye took me not in; naked, and
" ye clothed me not; ſick, and in pri-
" ſon, and ye viſited me not.
" Then ſhall they alſo anſwer him,
44. " ſaying, Lord, when ſaw we thee an
" hungred, or athirſt, or a ſtranger, or
" naked, or ſick, or in priſon, and did
" not miniſter to thee?
" Then ſhall he anſwer them, ſaying,
45. " Verily, I ſay unto you, In as much
" as ye did it not to one of the leaſt of
" theſe, ye did it not to me. And theſe
" ſhall go away into everlaſting puniſh-
" ment: but the righteous into life
" eternal.

SECT. CXXVIII.

Jeſus teaches daily in the Temple.

Luk. xxi. 37. AND in the day time he was teach-
ing in the temple, and at night
he went out, and abode in the mount
that is called the Mount of Olives.
38. And all the people came early in the
morning to him in the temple, for to
hear him.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. Jerusalem.

SECT. CXXIX.

Two days before the Passover Jesus foretels his death, which the Sanhedrim had determined.

AND it came to pass when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, [a] *Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, * and of unleavened bread:* * *and the son of man is betrayed to be crucified.* Then assembled together the chief Priests and the Scribes, and the Elders of the people, to the palace of the high Priest, who was called Caiphas, * [b] And the chief Priests and the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. * [c] But they said, *not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people,* * *for they feared the people.*

1. Mat. xxvi.
[a] Mar. xiv. 1. Luk. xxii. 1.
2.
1. Mar. xiv. 2. Mat. xxvi.
3.
[b] Mat. xxvi. 4. Luk. xxii. 2.
1. Mar. xiv.
[c] Mar. xiv. 2.
5. Mat. xxvi.
2. Luk. xxii.

SECT. CXXX.

Jesus is anointed in the house of Simon. Bethany.

[d] NOW when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper. There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box * of ointment of Spikenard, very precious; and she brake the box, [a] and poured it on his head, * as he sat at meat. [b] But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, *To what purpose is this waste * of the*

6. Mat. xxvi.
[d] Mar. xiv. 3.
7.
3. Mar. xiv.
[a] Mat. xxvi. 7.
7. Mat. xxvi.
[b] Mar. xiv. 4.
8.
4. 5. Mar. xiv.

Bethany. *the ointment made? [c] For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor.* Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. [c] Mat. xxvi. 9.

Mat. xxvi. 10. And they murmured against her. [*d] When Jesus understood it, he said to them, [d] Mar. xiv. 6.
" Why trouble ye the woman? for she
" has wrought a good work upon me.
Mar. xiv. 7. " [*e] For ye have the poor with you al- [e] Mat. xxvi.
" ways, and when soever ye will, ye 11.
" may do them good: but me ye have
" not always. She hath done what
Mat. xxvi. 12. " she could. [*] For in that she hath
" poured this ointment on my body;
Mar. xiv. 8. " [*f] She is come aforehand to anoint [f] Mat. xxvi.
Mat. xxvi. 13. " my body to the burying. [*g] Verily 12.
" I say unto you, wheresoever this [g] Mar. xiv. 9.
" gospel shall be preached in the whole
" world, there shall also this, that
" this woman hath done, be told for a
" memorial of her.

SECT. CXXXI.

Jerusalem. *Judas bargains with the Sanhedrim to betray Jesus.*

Luk. xxii. 3. THen entred Satan into Judas, sirnamed Iscariot, being of the number
4. of the twelve. [a] And he went his way, [a] Mat. xxvi.
and communed with the chief Priests and 14.
Captains, how he might betray him un- Mar. xiv. 10.
Mat. xxvi. 15. to them. [*] And said unto them, *What*
will ye give me, and I will deliver him un-
Mar. xix. 11. *to you?* [*] And when they heard it, they
were glad, and promised to give him
Mat. xxvi. 15. money. [*b] And they covenanted with [b] Luk. xxii.
Luk. xxii. 6. him for thirty pieces of silver. [*] And
he

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.
c Mar. xiv. 11. Luk. xxii. 6.

he promised, *c And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him * unto them in the absence of the multitude.

Jerusalem.
6. Luk. xxii. Mat. xxvi. 16.

SECT. CXXXII.

The fourth Passover after Christ's Baptism. Jesus celebrates the last Passover with his Disciples, foretels the Treachery of Judas, and institutes the Eucharist.

THen came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be
7. Luk. xxii.

a Mar. xiv. 12. killed. *a Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, * when they killed the passover, * the disciples came
17. Mat. xxvi. 12. Mar. xiv. 17. Mat. xxvi.

b Mat. xxvi. 17. Luk. xxii. 9. to Jesus, saying unto him, *b Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that
12. Mar. xiv.

c Mar. xiv. 13. thou mayest eat the passover? *c And he sent Peter and John, saying, *Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.*
8. Luk. xxii.

d Mat. xxvi. 18. Mar. xiv. 13. Luk. xxii. 10. And he said unto them, " *d Go ye " into the city, * Behold when ye are " entred into the city, there shall a man " meet you, bearing a pitcher of water: " follow him into the house where he " entreth in. * And whersoever he
10. 13. Mar. xiv. 10. Luk. xxii. 14. Mar. xiv.

e Mat. xxv. 18. Luk. xxii. 11. " shall go in, e say ye to the good man " of the house, The master saith, * My " time is at hand, I will keep the pas- " sover at thy house with my disciples.
18. Mat. xxiv.

f Luk. xxii. 11, 12. " *f Where is the guest chamber, where " I shall eat the passover with my dis- " ciples? And he will shew you a
14. Mar. xiv. 15.

 " large

Jeruſalem. " large (†) upper-room furniſhed and Anno
" prepared: there make ready for us. Ætat. 33.
Mar. xiv. 16. [a] And his diſciples went forth, and came Miniſt. 4.
into the city, and found as he had ſaid [a] Mat. xxvi.
unto them: and they made ready the 19. Luk. xxii.
Mat. xxvi. 20. paſſover. [b] Now when the even was 13.
Luk. xxii. 14. come, he ſat down, * and the twelve [b] Mar. xiv.
Mar. xiv. 18. apoſtles with him. * And as they ſat, 17. Luk. xxii.
Mat. xxvi. 21. and did eat, Jeſus ſaid, * [c] *Verily I ſay* 14.
unto you, that one of you ſhall betray [c] Mar. xiv.
Luk. xxii. 21. *me,* * *But behold, the hand of him that* 18.
betrayeth me, is with me on the table,
Mar. xiv. 18. * *which eateth with me.* * [d] And they [d] Mar. xiv.
Mat. xxii. 22. were exceeding ſorrowful, and began 19, 20.
every one of them to ſay unto him, Luk. xxii.
23. Lord, is it I? And he anſwered and 23.
ſaid, *He that dippeth his hand with me*
in the diſh, the ſame ſhall betray me.
Mar. xiv. 21. * [e] *The ſon of man indeed goeth, as it* [e] Mat. xxvi
is written of him: but wo to that man 24.
by whom the ſon of man is betrayed: Luk. xxii.
good were it for that man if he had never 22.
Mat. xxvi. 25. *been born.* * Then Judas which be-
trayed him, anſwered, and ſaid, *Maſter,*
is it I? He ſaid unto him, *thou haſt*
ſaid.

(†) *Upper room*, It was their private houſe of Oratory in the uppermoſt part of their dwelling Houſes. The upper Rooms in Scripture, were places in that part of the Houſe which was higheſt from the ground, ſet apart by the *Jews* for their private Occaſions and Devotions, to be addreſs'd towards *Solomon*'s Temple, or the place of that, which for the Conſecration and conveniency of receſs, the Apoſtles made uſe of in the Chriſtian way. See *Acts* i. 13. ix. 37, 39. xx. 8, 9. *Dan.* vi. 10. *Jer.* xxii. 13, 14. *Gregory.*

And

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

[f] Mar. xiv. 22. Luk. xxii. 19. 1 Cor. xi. 24. [g] Mat. xxvi. 27. Mar. xiv. 23. 1 Cor. xi. 25. [h] Mat. xxvi. [i] Mat. xxvi. 28. Mar. xiv. 24. 1 Cor. xi, 25.

[f] And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, *Take, eat*; * **This is my body which is given** *for you: this do in remembrance of me,* [g] Likewise also * he took the cup * after supper, * [h] And when he had given thanks, he gave it to them, And he said unto them, * *Drink ye also of it:* * [i] *This cup is the new testament in my blood,* * *which is shed for many for the remission of sins.* * *This do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.* * And they all drank of it.

Jerusalem.
26. Mat. xvi.
{ 20. Luk. xxii. / 23. Mar. xiv.
Luk. xxii. 20.
23. Mar. xiv.
{ 24. / 27. Mat. xvi.
20. Luk. xxii.
28. Mat. xxvi.
25. 1 Cor. xi.
23. Mar. xiv.

* And he said unto them, " With
" desire I have desired to eat this pas-
" soever with you before I suffer. For
" I say unto you, I will not any more
" eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the
" kingdom of God. And he took the
" cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take
" this, and divide it among your selves.
[k] Mat. xxvi. 29. Mar. xiv. 25. Luk. xxii. 18. " [k] For I say unto you, I will not drink
" of the fruit of the vine, * until that
" day when I drink it new in my Fa-
" ther's kingdom.

15. Luk. xxii.
16.
17.
18.
29. Mat. xxvi.

Jeruſalem. Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

SECT. CXXXIII.

Jeſus recommends Humility to his Apoſtles, waſhes their feet. He acquaints them that his death draws nigh, and ſhould be betrayed by Judas. His diſcourſe to them again of his death, commands the Apoſtles to love one another, forewarns Peter of his denial of him, and comforts his Apoſtles.

Joh. xiii. 1. NOW before the feaſt of the paſſover, when Jeſus knew that his hour was come, that he ſhould depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2. And ſupper being ended (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iſcariot, Simon's ſon, to betray him.)

3. Jeſus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God.

Luk. xxii. 24. * And there was alſo a ſtrife among them, which of them ſhould be accoun-

25. ted the greateſt. And he ſaid unto them,

" The kings of the Gentiles exerciſe

" Lordſhip over them; and they that

" exerciſe authority upon them, are

26. " called benefactors. But ye ſhall not

" be ſo: but he that is greateſt among

" you,

Anno Ætat. 33. Ministr. 4.

" you, let him be as the younger; and Jerusalem,
" he that is chief, as he that doth serve. Luk. xxii.
" For whether is greater, he that sitteth 27.
" at meat, or he that serveth? is not
" he that sitteth at meat? but I am a-
" mong you as he that serveth. Ye 28.
" are they which have continued with
" me in my temptations. And I ap- 29.
" point unto you a kingdom, as my Fa-
" ther has appointed unto me: That ye 30.
" may eat and drink at my table in my
" kingdom, and sit on thrones, judg-
" ing the twelve tribes of Israel.

* He riseth from supper, and laid 4. Joh. xiii.
aside his garments, and took a towel,
and girded himself. After that, he pour- 5.
eth water into a bason, and began to
wash the disciples feet, and to wipe
them with the towel wherewith he was
girded. Then cometh he to Simon Pe- 6.
ter: and Peter saith unto him, *Lord,*
dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answer- 7.
ed and said unto him, *What I do thou*
knowest not now; but thou shalt know
hereafter. Peter saith unto him, *Thou* 8.
shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answer-
ed him, *If I wash thee not, thou hast no*
part with me. Simon Peter saith unto 9.
him, *Lord, not my feet only, but also*
my hands and my head. Jesus saith to 10.
him, *He that is washed, needeth not,*
save to wash his feet, but is clean every
whit: and ye are clean, but not all.
For he knew who should betray him; 11.
therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

Jeruſalem. Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Joh. xiii. 12. So after he had waſhed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was ſet down again, he ſaid unto them, "Know ye what I have done to you?
13. "Ye call me Maſter, and Lord, and
14. "ſay well; for ſo I am. If I then "your Lord and Maſter, have waſhed "your feet, ye alſo ought to waſh one
15. "anothers feet. For I have given you "an example, that ye ſhould do as I
16. "have done to you. Verily, verily I "ſay unto you, The ſervant is not "greater than his Lord, neither he that "is ſent, greater than he that ſent
17. "him. If ye know theſe things, hap-
18. "py are ye if ye do them. I ſpeak "not of you all, I know whom I have "choſen: but that the Scripture may be "fulfilled, He that eateth bread with "me, hath lift up his heel againſt me.
19. "Now I tell you before it come, that "when it is come to paſs, ye may be-
20. "lieve that I am he. Verily, verily I ſay "unto you, He that receiveth whomſo-"ever I ſend, receiveth me, and he that re-"ceiveth me, receiveth him that ſent me.
21. When Jeſus had thus ſaid, he was troubled in ſpirit, and teſtified, and ſaid, *Verily, verily I ſay unto you; that one*
22. *of you ſhall betray me.* Then the diſciples looked one on another, doubting
23. of whom he ſpake. Now there was leaning on Jeſus boſom one of his diſ-
24. ciples, whom Jeſus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckned to him, that he ſhould ask who it ſhould be of whom

he

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

he spake. He then lying on Jesus breast, Jerusalem.
saith unto him, *Lord, who is it?* Jesus 25. Joh. xiii.
answered, *He it is to whom I shall give* 26.
a sop, when I have dipped it. And when
he had dipped the sop, he gave it to
Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. And 27.
after the sop, Satan entred into him.
Then said Jesus unto him, *That thou doest, do quickly.*

Now no man at the table knew for 28.
what intent he spake this unto him.
For some of them thought because Ju- 29.
das had the bag, that Jesus had said un-
to him, Buy those things that we have
need of against the feast: or that he
should give something to the poor.

He then having received the sop, 30.
went immediately out: and it was night.
Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus 31.
said, " Now is the son of man glori-
" fied, and God is glorified in him. If 32.
" God be glorified in him, God shall
" also glorifie him in himself, and
" straightway glorifie him. Little chil- 33.
" dren, yet a little while I am with you.
" Ye shall seek me; and as I said unto
" the Jews, whither I go, ye cannot
" come; so now I say unto you. A 34.
" new commandment I give unto you,
" That ye love one another, as I have
" loved you, that ye also love one ano-
" ther. By this shall all men know 35.
" that ye are my disciples, if ye have
" love one to another.

Simon Peter said unto him, *Lord,* 36.
whither goest thou? Jesus answered him,

Whither

Jeruſalem. Joh. xiii. *Whether I go, thou canſt not follow me now; but thou ſhalt follow me after-* Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.
37. *wards.* Peter ſaid unto him, *Lord,*
Luk. xxii. 31. *why cannot I follow thee now?* * And
the Lord ſaid, *Simon, Simon, behold,*
Satan hath deſired to have you, that he
32. *may ſift you as wheat. But I have pray-*
ed for thee that thy faith fail not; and
when thou art converted, ſtrengthen thy
33. *brethren.* And he ſaid unto him, *Lord,*
I am ready to go with thee both into
Joh. xiii. 37. *priſon, and to death.* * *I will lay down*
my life for thy ſake. [a] Jeſus anſwered [a] Luk. xxii.
him, *Wilt thou lay down thy life for my* 34.
ſake? Verily, verily, I ſay unto thee,
Luk. xxii. 34. *The cock ſhall not crow, *this day, [b] before* [b] Joh. xiii.
thou ſhalt thrice deny that thou know- 38.
eſt me.
35. And he ſaid unto them, *When I ſent*
you without purſe, and ſcrip, and ſhoes,
lacked ye any thing? And they ſaid,
36. *Nothing.* Then ſaid he to them, " But
" now he that hath a purſe, let him
" take it, and likewiſe his ſcrip; and
" he that hath no ſword, let him ſell
37. " his garment, and buy one. For I ſay
" unto you, that this that is written,
" muſt yet be accompliſhed in me,
" [*Iſaiah* liii. 12.] *And he was reckoned*
" *among the tranſgreſſors:* for the things
38. " concerning me have an end. And
they ſaid, *Lord, behold, here are two*
ſwords. And he ſaid unto them, *It is*
enough.
Joh. xiv. 1. " * Let not your heart be troubled;
" ye believe in God, believe alſo in me.

" In

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" In my Father's house are many man- Jerusalem.
" sions; if it were not so, I would 2. Joh. xiv.
" have told you: I go to prepare a
" place for you. And if I go and pre- 3.
" pare a place for you, I will come a-
" gain, and receive you unto my self,
" that where I am, there ye may be
" also. And whither I go ye know, 4.
" and the way ye know. Thomas 5.
" saith unto him, *Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way?* Jesus saith unto him, " I am 6.
" the way, and the truth, and the life:
" no man cometh to the Father but by
" me. If ye had known me, ye should 7.
" have known my Father also: and
" from henceforth ye know him, and
" have seen him. Philip saith unto him, 8.
Lord shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, " Have I been 9.
" so long time with you, and yet hast
" thou not known me, Philip? he that
" hath seen me hath seen the Father;
" and how sayest thou then, shew us
" the Father? Believest thou not that 10.
" I am in the Father, and the Father in
" me? the words that I speak unto you,
" I speak not of my self: but the Fa-
" ther that dwelleth in me, he doth the
" works. Believe me that I am in the 11.
" Father, and the Father in me: or
" else believe me for the very works
" sake. Verily, verily I say unto you, 12.
" He that believeth on me, the works
" that I do, shall he do also, and greater
" works than these shall he do; be-

" cause

Jeruſalem. Joh. xiv. " cauſe I go unto my Father. And 13. " whatſoever ye ſhall ask in my name, " that will I do, that the Father may 14. " be glorified in the ſon. If ye ſhall " ask any thing in my name, I will do 15. " it. If ye love me, keep my com- 16. " mandments. And I will pray the " Father, and he ſhall give you another " comforter, that he may abide with 17. " you for ever; even the ſpirit of truth, " whom the world cannot receive, " becauſe it ſeeth him not, neither " knoweth him: but ye know him, " for he dwelleth with you, and ſhall 18. " be in you. I will not leave you com- 19. " fortleſs; I will come to you, Yet a " little while, and the world ſeeth me " no more: but ye ſee me: becauſe I 20. " live, ye ſhall live alſo. At that day " ye ſhall know that I am in my Fa- " ther, and you in me, and I in you. 21. " He that hath my commandments, " and keepeth them, he it is that lo- " veth me: and he that loveth me ſhall " be loved of my Father, and I will " love him, and will manifeſt my ſelf " to him.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

22. Judas ſaith unto him, not Iſcariot, *Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifeſt thy ſelf unto us, and not unto the world?*

23. Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, " If " a man love me, he will keep my " words: and my Father will love him, " and we will come to him, and make 24. " our abode with him. He that loveth " me not, keepeth not my ſayings: " and

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" and the word which you hear, is not Jerusalem.
" mine, but the Fathers which sent Joh. xiv.
" me.
" These things have I spoken unto 25.
" you, being yet present with you.
" But the comforter which is the holy 26.
" Ghost, whom the Father will send
" in my name, he shall teach you all
" things, and bring all things to your
" remembrance, whatsoever I have said
" unto you.
" Peace I leave with you, my peace 27.
" I give unto you, not as the world
" giveth, give I unto you. Let not
" you heart be troubled, neither let it
" be afraid. Ye have heard how I said 28.
" unto you, I go away, and come again
" unto you. If ye loved me, ye would
" rejoice, because I said, I go unto the
" Father: for my Father is greater than
" I. And now I have told you before 29.
" it come to pass, that when it is come
" to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter 30.
" I will not talk much with you: for
" the prince of this world cometh, and
" hath nothing in me. But that the 31.
" world may know that I love the Fa-
" ther; and as the Father gave me
[a] Mar. xiv. 26. " commandment, even so I do. Arise 30. Mat. xxvi.
" let us go hence. *[a] And when they
" had sung an hymn, they went out.

SECT.

Mount of Olives.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

SECT. CXXXIV.

Jesus with his Apostles goes to the Mount of Olives. Exhorts them to observe his Law, and have mutual affection for one another. Foretels the calamities should befal them on account of the Gospel, comforts them, and promises them the holy Ghost. Prays to God for them.

Luk. xxii. 39. AND [*Jesus*] came out, and went, as he was wont, [b] to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. [*And he thus spake to them.*]

[b] Mat. xxvi. 30. Mar. xiv. 26.

Joh. xv. 1. " * I am the true vine, and my Fa-
2. " ther is the husbandman. Every branch
" in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh
" away: and every branch that beareth
" fruit, he purgeth it, that it may
3. " bring forth more fruit. Now ye are
" clean through the word which I have
4. " spoken unto you. Abide in me, and
" I in you, as the branch cannot bear
" fruit of it self, except it abide in the
" vine; no more can ye, except ye
5. " abide in me. I am the vine, and ye
" are the branches. He that abideth
" in me, and I in him, the same bring-
" eth forth much fruit: for without
6. " me ye can do nothing. If a man

" abide

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" abide not in me, he is cast forth Mount of
" as a branch, and is withered; and Olives.
" men gather them, and cast them in- Joh. xv.
" to the fire, and they are burned. If 7.
" ye abide in me, and my words abide
" in you, ye shall ask what ye will,
" and it shall be done unto you. Here- 8.
" in is my Father glorified, that ye
" bear much fruit, so shall ye be my
" disciples.
" As the Father has loved me, so 9.
" have I loved you: continue ye in my
" love. If ye keep my commandments, 10.
" ye shall abide in my love: even as I
" have kept my Father's commandments,
" and abide in his love. These things 11.
" have I spoken to you, that my joy
" might remain in you, and that your
" joy might be full.
" This is my commandment, That 12.
" ye love one another as I have loved
" you. Greater love hath no man than 13.
" this, that a man lay down his life
" for his friends. Ye are my friends, 14.
" if ye do whatsoever I command you.
" Henceforth I call ye not servants; for 15.
" the servant knoweth not what his
" Lord doeth: but I have called you
" friends; for all things that I have
" heard of my Father, I have made
" known unto you. Ye have not cho- 16.
" sen me; but I have chosen you, and
" ordained you, that you should go and
" bring forth fruit, and that your fruit
" should remain: that whatsoever ye
" shall ask of the Father in my name,

" he

Mount of Olives. Joh. xv.

" he may give it you. Theſe things I command you that ye love one another. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own; but becauſe ye are not of the world, but I have choſen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I ſaid unto you, The ſervant is not greater than the Lord. If they have perſecuted me, they will alſo perſecute you, if they have kept my ſaying, they will keep yours alſo. But all theſe things will they do unto you for my names ſake, becauſe they know not him that ſent me. If I had not come and ſpoke unto them, they had not had ſin: but now they have no cloke for their ſin. He that hateth me, hateth my Father alſo. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had ſin: but now have they both ſeen, and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to paſs that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cauſe. But when the comforter is come, whom I will ſend unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he ſhall teſtifie of me. And ye alſo ſhall bear witneſs, becauſe ye have been with me from the beginning.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

" Theſe

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

"These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the syna- gogues: yea the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doth God service. And these things will they do unto you, be- cause they have not known the Fa- ther, nor me. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, whither goest thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the truth: it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not a- way, the comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judg- ment: Of sin because they believe not me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged. I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. How- beit, when the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of him- self,

Mount of Olives.

1. John. xvi.

2.

3.

4.

5.

6.

7.

8.

9.

10.

11.

12.

13.

Mount of Olives. Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Joh. xvi. 14. " self; but whatsoever he shall hear, " that shall he speak: and he will shew " you things to come. He shall glorifie " me: for he shall receive of mine, and
15. " shall shew it unto you. All things that " the Father hath are mine: therefore " said I, that he shall take of mine, and
16. " shall shew it unto you. A little while, " and ye shall not see me: and again a " little while, and ye shall see me, " because I go to the Father.
17. Then said some of his disciples among themselves, *What is this that he saith unto us?* A little while and ye shall not see me; and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and because I go to
18. the Father? They said therefore, *What is this that he saith, a little while? we cannot tell what he saith.*
19. Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, " Do ye inquire among your selves of " that I said, A little while, and ye " shall not see me: and again a little
20. " while and ye shall see me? Verily, " verily I say unto you, That ye shall " weep and lament, but the world shall " rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, " but your sorrow shall be turned into
21. " joy. A woman when she is in tra- " vail, hath sorrow, because her hour " is come: but as soon as she is deliver'd " of the child, she remembreth no more " the anguish, for joy that a man is
22. " born into the world. And ye now " therefore have sorrow: but I will see

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" you again, and your heart shall re- Mount of
" joice, and your joy no man taketh Olives.
" from you. And in that day ye shall Joh. xvii.
" ask me nothing. Verily, verily I say 23.
" unto you, whatsoever ye shall ask
" the Father in my name, he will
" give it you. Hitherto have ye asked 24.
" nothing in my name: ask, and ye
" shall receive, that your joy may be
" full. These things have I spoken un- 25.
" to you in proverbs: the time cometh
" when I shall no more speak unto you in
" proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly
" of the Father. At that day ye shall 26.
" ask in my name: and I say not unto
" you, that I will pray the Father for
" you; For the Father himself loveth 27.
" you because ye have loved me, and
" have believed that I came out from
" God. I am come forth from the Fa- 28.
" ther, and am come into the world:
" again, I leave the world, and go to
" the Father.

His disciples said unto him, *Lo, now* 29.
speakest thou plainly, and speakest no
proverb. Now are we sure that thou 30.
knowest all things, and needest not that
any man should ask thee: by this we
believe that thou camest forth from God.

Jesus answered them, " Do ye now 31.
" believe? Behold the hour cometh, 32.
" yea, is now come, that ye shall be
" scattered, every man to his own,
" and shall leave me alone: and yet I
" am not alone, because the Father is
" with me. These things I have spoken 33.

Mount of Olives. Joh. xvi.

" unto you, that in me ye might have
" peace. In the world ye ſhall have
" tribulation: but be of good cheer, I
" have overcome the world.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Joh. xvii. 1. Theſe words ſpake Jeſus, and lift up his eyes to heaven, and ſaid, " Father,
" the hour is come; glorifie thy ſon,
" that thy ſon alſo may glorifie thee.
2. " As thou haſt given him power over
" all fleſh, that he ſhould give eternal
" life to as many as thou haſt given
3. " him. And this is life eternal, that
" they might know thee the only true
" God, and Jeſus Chriſt whom thou
4. " haſt ſent. I have glorified thee on
" the earth: I have finiſhed the work
5. " which thou gaveſt me to do. And
" now, O Father, glorifie thou me with
" thine own ſelf, with the glory which
" I had with thee before the world was.
6. " I have manifeſted thy name unto the
" men which thou gaveſt me out of the
" world: thine they were, and thou
" gaveſt them me; and they have kept
7. " thy word. Now they have known
" that all things whatſoever thou haſt
8. " given me, are of thee. For I have
" given unto them the words which
" thou gaveſt me; and they have re-
" ceived them, and have known ſurely
" that I came out from thee, and they
" have believed that thou didſt ſend
9. " me. I pray for them: I pray not for
" the world, but for them which thou
" haſt given me, for they are thine.
10. " And all mine are thine, and thine

" are

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

" are mine, and I am glorified in them. Mount of
" And now I am no more in the world, Olives.
" but these are in the world, and I 11. Joh. xvii.
" come to thee. Holy Father, keep
" through thine own name those whom
" thou hast given me, that they may
" be one as we are. While I was with 12.
" them in the world, I kept them in
" thy name: those that thou gavest me
" I have kept, and none of them is
" lost, but the son of perdition; that
" the scripture might be fulfilled. And 13.
" now come I to thee, and these things
" I speak in the world, that they
" might have my joy fulfilled in them-
" selves. I have given them thy word; 14.
" and the world hath hated them, be-
" cause they are not of the world, even
" as I am not of the world. I pray not 15.
" that thou shouldest take them out of
" the world, but that thou shouldest
" keep them from the evil. They are 16.
" not of the world, even as I am not
" of the world. Sanctifie them through 17.
" thy truth: thy word is truth. As 18.
" thou hast sent me into the world,
" even so have I also sent them into the
" world. And for their sakes I sancti- 19.
" fie my self, that they also might be
" sanctified through the truth. Neither 20.
" pray I for these alone, but for them
" also which shall believe on me through
" their word: That they all may be 21.
" one; as thou Father art in me, and
" I in thee; that they also may be one
" in us: that the world may believe

Mount of Olives. Joh. xvii.

" that thou haſt ſent me. And the
" glory which thou gaveſt me, I have
22. " given them: that they may be one,
23. " even as we are one. I in them, and
" thou in me, that they may be made
" perfect in one, and that the world
" may know that thou haſt ſent me,
" and haſt loved them, as thou haſt
24. " loved me. Father, I will that they
" alſo whom thou haſt given me, be
" with me where I am; that they may
" behold my glory which thou haſt
" given me: for thou lovedſt me be-
" fore the foundation of the world.
25. " O righteous Father, the world hath
" not known thee; but I have known
" thee, and theſe have known that thou
26. " haſt ſent me. And I have declared
" unto them, thy name, and will de-
" clare it: that the love wherewith
" thou haſt loved me, may be in them,
" and I in them.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

SECT. CXXXV.

Jesus passes over the Brook Cedron, and goes to the Garden of Gethsemane. He foretels his being seized that night, is in agony, he is seized by the guard, Judas being at the head of them. Peter cuts off the Ear of the High Priest's Servant, for which Jesus rebukes him, and heals the wound: He is carried before the High Priest. Peter thrice denies him.

WHEN Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred and his disciples. [a] Then saith Jesus unto them, "All ye shall be offended "because of me this night: for it is "written [*Zach.* xiii. 7.] *I will smite* "*the shepherd, and the sheep of the* "*flock shall be scattered abroad.* But "after I am risen again, I will go be- "fore you into Galilee. Peter answered and said unto him, *Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.* [b] Jesus saith unto him, *Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.*

1. Joh. xviii. Garden. 31. Mat. xxvi. [a] Mar. xiv. 27, 28, 29. 32. 33. 30. Mar xiv. [b] Mat. xxvi. 34, 35.

Garden. But he ſpake the more vehemently, *If* Anno
Mar. xiv. 31. *I ſhould die with thee, I will not deny* Ætat. 33.
thee in any wiſe. Likewiſe ſaid they Miniſt. 4.
Mat. xxvi. 36. all. * [c] Then cometh Jeſus with them [c] Mar. xiv.
unto a place call'd Gethſemane, and 32.
ſaith unto the diſciples, *Sit ye here,* Luk. xxii.
Luk. xxii. 40. *while I go and pray yonder.* * *Pray that* 40.
Mat. xxvi. 37. *ye enter not into temptation.* * [d] And [d] Mar. xiv.
he took with him Peter, and the two 33.
Mar. xiv. 33. ſons of Zebedee, * James and John,
[e] and began to be ſore amazed, and to [e] Mat. xxvi.
Mat. xxvi. 38. be very heavy. * [f] Then ſaith he unto 37.
them, *My ſoul is exceeding ſorrowful,* [f] Mar. xiv.
even unto death: tarry here, and watch 34.
Mar. xiv. 35. *with me.* * [g] And he went forward a [g] Mat. xxvi.
Luk. xxii. 41. little * about a ſtones caſt, and kneeled 39.
Mar. xiv. 35. down, and prayed, * that if it were Luk. xxii.
poſſible, the hour might paſs from him. 41, 42.
36. And he ſaid, *Abba, Father, all things*
are poſſible unto thee; take away this
cup from me: nevertheleſs not what I
Luk. xxii. 43. *will, but what thou wilt.* * And there
appeared an angel unto him from hea-
44. ven, ſtrengthening him. And being in
an agony, he prayed more earneſtly:
and his ſweat was as it were great drops
of blood falling down to the ground.
45. [z] And when he roſe up from prayer, [z] Mat. xxvi.
and was come to his diſciples, he found 40.
Mar. xiv. 37. them ſleeping for ſorrow, * [h] And ſaith Mar. xiv. 37.
unto Peter, *Simon, ſleepeſt thou? couldſt* [h] Mat. xxvi.
38. *not thou watch one hour? Watch ye and* 40, 41.
pray, leſt ye enter into temptation; the Luk. xxii.
ſpirit truly is ready, but the fleſh is 46.
Mat. xxvi. 42. *weak.* * [i] He went away again the ſe- [i] Mar. xiv.
cond time, and prayed, ſaying, *O my* 39.
Father,

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Father, if this cup may not pass from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

k Mat. xxvi. 43. * k And when he returned, he found them asleep (for their eyes were heavy) neither wist they what to answer him. 40. Mar. xiv.

* And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words, 44. Mat. xxvi.

l Mat. xxvi. 45. * l And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, *Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold the son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.* 41. Mar. xiv.

m Mar. xiv. 42. * m *Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.* 46. Mat. xxvi.

* And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oftimes resorted thither with his disciples. Judas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chief Priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanthorns 2. Joh. xviii. 3.

n Mat. xxvi. 47, 48, 49. Luk. xxii. 47. * n And immediately while [*Jesus*] yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude, with swords and staves, from the chief Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders. And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, *Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.* 43. Mar. xiv. 44. 45.

o Mar. xiv. 45. Luk. xxii. 47. * o And as soon as he was come he goeth straightway to Jesus, and said, *Hail master*, and kissed him. 49. Mat. xxvi.

p Mat. xxvi. 50. * p But Jesus said unto him, * *Friend, wherefore art thou come?* * *Judas, betrayest thou the son of man with a kiss?* 48. Luk. xxii. { 50. Mat. xxvi. 48. Luk. xxii.

* Jesus

Garden. Joh. xviii. 4. * Jeſus therefore knowing all things that ſhould come upon him, went forth, and ſaid unto them, *Whom ſeek ye?* Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.
5. They anſwered him, *Jeſus of Nazareth.* Jeſus ſaith unto them, *I am he.* And Judas alſo which betrayed him, ſtood
6. with them. As ſoon then as he had ſaid unto them, *I am he*, they went backward, and fell to the ground.
7. Then asked he them again, *Whom ſeek ye?* And they ſaid, *Jeſus of Naza-*
8. *reth.* Jeſus anſwered, *I have told you that I am he. If therefore ye ſeek me,*
9. *let theſe go their way:* That the ſaying might be fulfilled which he ſpake, *Of them which thou gaveſt me have I loſt*
12. *none.* [q] Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jeſus, and [q] Mat.xxvi. 50.
Luk. xxii. 49. bound him. * When they which were about him, ſaw what would follow, they ſaid unto him, *Lord, ſhall we ſmite*
Joh. xviii. 10. *with the ſword.* * [a] Then Simon Peter [a] Mat.xxvi.
Mat. xxvi. 51. having a ſword, * ſtretched forth his hand, and drew his ſword, and ſtroke 51. Mar.xiv.47.
Joh. xviii. 10. a ſervant of the high Prieſt, * and cut off his right ear, the ſervants name was Luk. xxii. 50. Joh. xviii.
11. Malchus. [b] Then ſaid Jeſus unto Peter, 10. [b] Mat.xxvi.
Mat. xxvi. 52. *Put up thy ſword into the ſheath,* * *for all they that take the ſword, ſhall periſh* 52. Luk. xxii.
53. *with the ſword. Thinkeſt thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he ſhall preſently give me more than twelve* 51.
54. *legions of angels? But how then ſhall the ſcriptures be fulfilled, that thus it*
Joh. xviii. 11. *muſt be.* * *The cup which my Father hath*

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

haah given me; shall I not drink it? Garden.
* And he touched his ear and healed him. 51. Luk. xxii.

[c] Mat. xxvi. 55. Mar. xiv. 48. [c] Then Jesus said unto the chief Priests and Captains of the temple, and the Elders which were come to him, "Be "ye come out as against a thief, with "swords and staves * for to take me? 52. "I sat daily with you teaching in the "temple, and ye laid no hold on me. 55. Mat. xxvi.

[d] Mar. xiv. 49. Luk. xxii. 53.

[e] Mar. xiv. 49, 50.

* But this is your hour, and the "power of darkness. * [e] But all this "was done, that the scriptures of the "Prophets might be fulfilled. 53. Luk. xxii. 56. Mat. xxvi.

Then all the disciples forsook him and fled. * And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young men laid hold on him. And he left the linen cloth and fled from them naked. 51. Mar. xiv. 52.

* And they led [*Jesus*] away to Annas first, (for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high Priest that same year.) Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people. (Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high Priest.) 13. John xviii. Jerusalem. 14. 24.

[f] Mar. xiv. 53. Luk. xxii. 54. [g] Mat. xxvi. 57. [h] Mat. xxvi. 58. Mar. xiv. 54 Luk. xxii. 54.

* [f] And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high Priest, * [g] and with him were assembled all the chief Priests, and Elders, and the Scribes. 57. Mat. xxvi. 53. Mar. xiv.

* [h] And Simon Peter followed Jesus * a far off, * and so did another disciple that 15 Joh. xviii. 58. Mat. xxvi. 15. Joh. xviii.

High Prieſt's Palace. John xviii. 16. that was known unto the high Prieſt, and went in with Jeſus into the palace of the high Prieſt. But Peter ſtood at the door without. Then went out that other diſciple which was known unto the high Prieſt, and ſpake to her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Luk. xxii. 55. * [i] And when they had kindled a fire in the midſt of the hall, and were ſet down together, Peter ſat down among [i] Mat. xxvi. 15. Mar. xiv. 54.

Mat. xxvi. 58. them * to ſee the end.

Mar. xiv. 66. * [a] And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids [a] Mat. xxvi. 69.

67. of the high Prieſt. [b] And when ſhe ſaw [b] Luk. xxii.

Luk. xxii. 56. Peter warming himſelf, ſhe * earneſtly 56.

John xviii. 17. looked upon him. * Then ſaith the damſel that kept the door unto Peter,

Mar. xiv. 67. * [c] *And thou alſo waſt with Jeſus of* [c] Mat. xxvi.

68. *Nazareth.* But he denied, ſaying, *I know not, neither underſtand I what thou* 69, 70. Luk. xxii. 56, 57.

Luk. xxii. 57. Mar. xiv. 68. *ſayeſt*, * *I know him not.* * And he went out into the porch; and the cock Joh. xviii. 17.

Joh. xviii. 18. crew. * And the ſervants and officers ſtood there, who had made a fire of coals, (for it was cold) and they warmed themſelves: and Peter ſtood with [d] Mar. xiv.

Mat. xxvi. 71. them, and warmed himſelf. * [d] And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid ſaw him, and ſaid unto 69. Luke xxii. 59. [e] Mar. xiv.

them that were there, *This fellow was* 70.

Joh. xviii. 25. *alſo with Jeſus of Nazareth.* * And [as] Simon Peter ſtood and warmed himſelf: they ſaid unto him, *Art thou* Luke xxii. 58. John xviii. 25.

Mat. xxvi. 72. *alſo one of his diſciples?* * [e] And again he denied with an oath, *I do not know* [f] Mat. xxvi. 73. Mar. xiv. 70.

Luk. xxii. 59. *the man.* * [f] And about the ſpace of one Luke xxii. 59.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

one hour after * one of the servants of the high Priest (being his kinsman, whose ear Peter had cut off) saith, * *Of a truth this fellow also was with him.* * *Did not I see thee in the garden with him?* * *for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.* [b] But he began to curse and to swear, saying, *I know not this man of whom ye speak.* * [c] And immediately while he yet spake the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter; [c] and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, *Before the cock crow* * *twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.* * And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

High Priest's Palace.

26. John xviii.
59. Luke xxii.
26. John xviii.
70. Mark xiv.
[b] Mat. xxvi. 74. Luk. xxii. 60. Joh. xviii. 27. Mar. xiv. 72.
71.
60. Luke xxii.
61.
[c] Mat. xxvi. 75. Mar. xiv. 72. Luk. xxii. 61.
72. Mark xiv.
62. Luke xxii.

* The high Priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine. Jesus answered him, "I spake openly to "the world, I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither "the Jews always resort, and in secret "have I said nothing. Why askest "thou me? ask them which heard me, "what I have said unto them: behold, "they know what I said. And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, stroke Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, *Answerest thou the high Priest so?* Jesus answered him, *If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil; but if well, why smitest thou me?*

19. John xviii.
20.
21.
22. John xviii.
23.

[d] Mar. xiv. 55. * [d] Now the chief Priests and Elders, and all the council sought false witness against

59. Mat. xxvi.

High Priest's Palace. against Jesus to put him to death, But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came. * For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together. * [b] At the last came * certain * two false witnesses, * and bare false witness against him, saying, we heard him say, *I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.* But neither so did their witness agree together.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Mark xiv. 56.
Mat. xxvi. 60.
Mar. xiv. 57.
Mat. xxvi. 60.
Mar. xiv. 57.
58.
59.

[b] Mar. xiv. 57.

SECT. CXXXVI.

The morning come, the chief Priests and Elders in council examine Jesus, who owns his being the Messiah, to the Sanhedrim.

Luk. xxvi. 66. AND as soon as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the chief Priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their council,

Mar. xiv. 60. * [a] And the high Priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, *Answerest thou nothing? what is it which*
61. *these witness against thee?* But he held his peace, and answered nothing. [*And*
Luk. xxii. 67. *they went on examining*] * saying, *Art thou the Christ? tell us.* And he said unto them, *If I tell you, you will not*
68. *believe. And if I also ask you, you will*
Mat. xxvi. 63. *not answer me, nor let me go.* * [b] And the high Priest answered and said unto him,

[a] Mat. xxvi. 62, 63.

[b] Mar. xiv. 62.

Anno Ætat. 33. Ministr. 4.
[c] Luk. xxii. 70.
[d] Mat. xxvi. 64.
[c] Mar. xiv. 63.
[f] Luk. xxii. 71.
[g] Mar. xiv. 64.
[h] Mar. xiv. 65.
[i] Luk. xxii. 64.

him, I *adjure thee by the living God*, Before the Council.
that thou tell us, [c] *whether thou be the Christ, the son of God.* *[d] And Jesus said, I am: [d] Hereafter shall the son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.* * *And ye shall see the son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.* 62. Mar. xiv. 69. Luk. xxii. 62. Mar. xiv.
* [e] Then the high Priest rent his clothes, saying, *He hath spoken blasphemy*, [f] *what farther need have we of witnesses?* * *for we our selves have heard of his own mouth*; [g] *behold now ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye?* * And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. 65. Mat. xxvi. 71. Luke xxii. 65. Mat. xxvi. 64. Mark xiv.
* And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him. * [h] Then did they spit in his face, and buffetted him, and others smote him with the palms of their hands. * And when they had blindfolded him, they stroke him on the face, and asked him, saying, [i] *Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?* And many other things blasphemously spake they against him. 63. Luk. xxii. 67. Mat. xxii. 64. Luk. xxii.

SECT.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

SECT. CXXXVII.

The Jews carry Jesus before Pilate, and demand sentence against him. Pilate examins him, acquits him, but at last through fear he condemns him, though against his will, and sets Barabbas free.

Mar. xv. 1. [c] AND straightway [*it being yet*] morning the chief Priests held a consultation with the Elders and Scribes, Mat. xxvii. 1. and the whole council * against Jesus 2. to put him to death. [d] And when they Joh. xviii. 28. had bound him, they * led him away Judgment Hall. from Caiaphas unto the hall of judg- Mar. xxvii. 2. ment, * and delivered him to Pontius Joh. xviii. 28. Pilate the governour. * And it was early, and they themselves went not into the judgment-hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the Joh. xviii. 29. passover. Pilate then went out unto them, and said, *What accusation bring* 30. *you against this man.* They answered and said unto him, *If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered* 31. *him up unto thee.* Then said Pilate unto them, *Take ye him, and judge him according to your law.* The Jews therefore said unto him, *It is not lawful for* 32. *us to put any man to death:* That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he Luke xxii. 2. should dye. * And they began to accuse him,

[c] Mat. xxvii. 1. Mark xv. 1. Luk. xxiii. 1.

[d] Mark xv. 1.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. him, saying, *We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying that he himself is Christ a king.* * And Jesus stood before the governour, [a] and the governour asked him, saying, *Art thou the king of the Jews?* And Jesus said unto him, * *Thou sayest it.* [b] * And when he was accused of the chief Priests and Elders * of many things, * he answered nothing. * [c] And Pilate asked him again, saying, *Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee.* But Jesus * [d] answered him to never a word, insomuch that the governour marvelled greatly.

Judgment Hall.

[a] Mar. xv. 2. Luk. xxiii. 3.

[b] Mar. xv. 3.

[c] Mat. xxvii. 13.

[d] Mar. xv. 5.

11. Mat. xxvii.
2. Mar. xv.
12. Mat. xxvii.
3. Mar. xv. / 12. Mat. xxvii.
4. Mar. xv. / 5.
14. Mat. xxvii.

* Then Pilate entred into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, *Art thou the king of the Jews?* Jesus answered him, *Sayest thou this thing of thy self, or did others tell it thee of me?* Pilate answered, *Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief Priests have delivered thee unto me. What hast thou done?* Jesus answered, *My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.* Pilate therefore said to him, *Art thou a king then?* Jesus answered, *Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth.*

33. Joh. xviii.
34.
35.
36.
37.

Judgment Hall. Mat. xxvii. 38. *Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.* Pilate ſaith unto him, *What is truth?* And when he had ſaid this, he went out again to the Jews, and Luk. xxiii. 4. ſaith * [a] to the chief Prieſts, and to the people, *I find no fault in this man* Joh. xviii. 38 } * *at all.* * And they were the more Luk. xxiii. 5. } fierce, ſaying, *he ſtirreth up the people,* Luk. xxiii. 5. *teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.*

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

[a] Joh. xviii. 33.

6. When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.
7. And as ſoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's juriſdiction, he ſent him to Herod, who himſelf was
8. alſo at Jeruſalem at that time. And

Before Herod. when Herod ſaw Jeſus, he was exceeding glad: for he was deſirous to ſee him of a long ſeaſon, becauſe he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have ſeen ſome miracle done
9. by him. Then he queſtioned with him in many words: but he anſwered him
10. nothing. And the chief Prieſts and Scribes ſtood and vehemently accuſed
11. him. And Herod with his men of war ſet him at nought, and mocked him,

Before Pilate. and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and
12. ſent him again to Pilate. And the ſame day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at en-
13. mity between themſelves. And Pilate when he had called together the chief Prieſts, and the rulers, and the people,

Luk. xxiii. 14. ſaid unto them, *Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people:*

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

*people: and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him; No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo nothing worthy of death is done unto him. I will therefore chastise him and release him. * But ye have a custom that I should release unto you one at the passover.*

Before Pilate. Luk. xxiii.
15. 16. 39. Joh. xviii.

[a] Mar. xv. 6, 7. Luk. xxiii. 17. * [a] Now at that feast the governour was wont to release to the people a prisoner, whom they would. And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas, * which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murther in the insurrection. And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them. * [b] Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, *Whom will ye that I release to you? Barabbas or Jesus, which is called Christ * the king of the Jews?* ([c] For he knew that the chief Priests had delivered him for envy) * When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent to him, saying, *Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.* [d] But the chief Priests and Elders persuaded the multitude, that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. * [e] And they cryed out all at once, saying, *Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas:* (who for a certain sedition made in

15. 16. Mar. xv. 7. 8. [b] Mar. xv. 9. Joh. xviii. 39. 17. Mat. xxvii. 9. Mar. xv. [c] Mat. xxvii. 18. 10. 19. Mat. xxvii. [d] Mar. xv. 11. 20. [e] Joh. xviii. 40. 18. Luk. xxiii.

Before Pilate. in the city, and for murther, was caſt Anno
Mar. xv. 12. in priſon.) * [c] And Pilate anſwered, Ætat. 33.
Luk. xxiii. 20. and ſaid again to them, * willing to re- Miniſt. 4.
Mat. xxvii. 21. leaſe Jeſus. * *Whether of the twain will* [c] Mat. xxvii.
ye that I releaſe to you? They ſaid, *Ba-* 21.
22. *rabbas.* Pilate ſaith unto them, *What* Luk. xxiii.
ſhall I do then with Jeſus, which is cal- 20.
Mar. xv. 12. *led Chriſt?* * *whom ye call the king of*
Luk. xxiii. 21. *the Jews?* * [d] But they cried, ſaying, [d] Mat. xxvii.
Mar. xv. 14. *Crucifie him, crucifie him.* * Then Pi- 22, 23.
late ſaid unto them, the third time, Mar. xv. 13,
Why, what evil hath he done? I have 14.
found no cauſe of death in him: I will
therefore chaſtiſe him, and let him go.
Mat. xxvii. 23. * [e] But they cryed out the more, ſay- [e] Mar. xv.
Luk. xxiii. 23. ing, *Let him be crucified:* * And the 14.
voices of them, and of the chief Prieſts Luk. xxiii.
prevailed. 23.

Joh. xix. 1. * Then Pilate therefore took Jeſus,
2. and ſcourged him, And the ſoldiers plat-
ted a crown of thorns, and put it on
his head, and they put on him a purple
3. robe, And ſaid, *Hail king of the Jews:*
and they ſmote him with their hands.
4. Pilate therefore went forth again, and
ſaith unto them, *Behold, I bring him*
forth to you, that ye may know that I
find no fault in him.
5. Then came Jeſus forth, wearing the
crown of thorns, and the purple robe.
And Pilate ſaith unto them, *Behold the*
6. *man.* When the chief Prieſts therefore
and officers ſaw him, they cried out,
ſaying, *Crucifie him, crucifie him.* Pi-
late ſaith unto them, *Take ye him and*
crucifie him: for I find no fault in him.

The

Anno Ætat. 33. Ministr. 4.

The Jews answered, *We have a law, and by our Law he ought to dye, because he made himself the son of God.* When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; And went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, *Whence art thou?* But Jesus gave him no answer. Then saith Pilate unto him, *Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee?* Jesus answered, *Thou couldst have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.* And from henceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, *If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar.* When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat, in a place that is called the pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, *Behold your king.* But they cried out, *Away with him, away with him, crucifie him:* Pilate saith unto them, *Shall I crucifie your king?* The chief Priests answered, *We have no king but Cæsar.*

Judgment Hall. Joh. xix. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15.

* When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying,

24. Mat. xxvii.

Judgment Hall. *I am innocent of the blood of this juſt* Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.
Joh. xix. 25. *perſon: ſee ye to it.* Then anſwered all
the people, and ſaid, *His blood be on*
Mar. xv. 15. *us, and on our children.* * And ſo Pi-
Luk. xxiii. 24. late willing to content the people, * gave
ſentence that it ſhould be as they re-
Mat. xxvii. 26. quired. * [a] Then releaſed he Barabbas [a] Mar. xv. 15.
Luk. xxiii. 25. unto them; * him that for ſedition and Luk. xxiii. 25.
murther was caſt into priſon, whom
Mat. xxvii. 26. they had deſired. * [b] And when he [b] Mar. xv. 15. Luk. xxiii. 25.
had ſcourged Jeſus, he delivered him to
27. be crucified. [c] Then the ſoldiers of the [c] Joh. xix. 16.
governour took Jeſus into the common
Mar. xv. 16. hall, * called (†) Pretorium; * and ga- [c] Mar. xv. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20.
Mat. xxvii. 27. thered unto him the whole band of
28. ſoldiers. And they ſtripped him, and
29. put on him a ſcarlet robe. And when
they had platted a crown of thorns,
they put it upon his head, and a reed
in his right hand: and they bowed the
knee before him, and mocked him,
30. ſaying, *Hail king of the Jews.* And
they ſpit upon him, and took the reed,
31. and ſmote him on the head. And after
that they had mocked him, they took
the robe off from him, and put his
own raiment on him, and led him a-
way to crucifie him.

(†) *Pretorium* is the ſame with Judgment-hall abovementioned, the place where the Roman Governours heard Cauſes, and gave Sentence.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4. Temple.

SECT. CXXXVIII.

Judas hangs himself through despair.

THEN Judas which had betrayed 3. Mat. xxvii.
[*Jesus*] when he saw that he was
condemned, repented himself; and
brought again the thirty pieces of silver to
the chief Priests and Elders, saying, *I have* 4.
sinned, in that I have betrayed the inno-
cent blood. And they said, *What is it*
to us? See thou to that. And he cast 5.
down the pieces of silver in the temple,
and departed, and went and hanged him-
self. * And falling headlong, he burst 18. Acts i,
asunder in the midst, and all his bowels
gushed out. * And the chief Priests 6. Mat. xxvii.
took the silver pieces, and said, *It is*
not lawful for to put them into the trea-
sury, because it is the price of blood.
[a] Acts i. 18. [a] And they took counsel and bought 7.
with them the potter's field to bury
[b] Acts i. 19. strangers in. * [b] And it was known un- 19. Acts i.
to all the dwellers at Jerusalem, inso-
much as that field is called in their pro-
per tongue, Aceldama, that is to say,
The field of blood. (* Then was ful- 9. Mat. xxvii.
filled that which was spoken by Jeremy
the prophet, saying, *And they took the*
thirty pieces of silver, the price of him
that was valued, whom they of the chil-
dren of Israel did value: And gave them 10.
for the potter's field, as the Lord appoin-
ted me.)

Golgotha.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

SECT. CXXXIX.

Jesus is led out to the place of Execution. He is crucified between two Robbers, one of which repents, and Jesus promises him the injoyment of Paradise. The words of Jesus while he hung on the Cross. His Death, and Miracles which preceded and followed it. The opinion of the Centurion and others concerning Jesus.

Joh. xix. 17. AND [*Jesus*] bearing his cross, went forth into a place called the place of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha. * [a] And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, * the father of Alexander and Rufus, * and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turning unto them, said, *Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children. For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains,*

Luk. xxiii. 26.
Mar. xv. 21.
Luk. xxiii. 26.
27.
28.
29.
30.

[a] Mat. xxvii. 32. Mar. xv. 21.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

tains, Fall on us; and to the hills, cover us. For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry? And there were also two other malefactors led with him to be put to
[a] Mat. xxvii. 33. Mar. xv. 22. death. [a] And when they were come to the place which is called Calvary [*or*] * Golgotha, which is being interpreted, The
[b] Mar. xv. 23. place of a Scull, * [b] They gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he
[c] Mat. xxvii. 35. Mar. xv. 24. Joh. xix. 18. Luk. xxiii. 34. would not drink: [c] * there they crucified him. * Then the soldiers when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments (and made four parts, to every soldier a part) and also his coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. They said therefore among themselves, *Let us not rent it,*
[d] Mat. xxvii. 35. [d] *but cast lots whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled,* [Psal. xxii. 9.] which saith, *They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots.* These things therefore the soldiers did. * And sitting down, they watched him there.
[e] Mat. xxvii. 37. Mar. xv. 26. Luk. xxiii. 38. * [e] And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was * in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS * JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.
* And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, *And he was numbred with the transgressors.* * This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city.

Golgotha. 31. Luk. xxiii.
32.
33.
22. Mar. xv.
34. Mat. xxvii.
33. Luk. xxiii.
23. Joh. xix.
24.
36. Mat. xxvii.
19. Joh. xix.
38. Luk. xxiii.
19. Joh. xix.
28. Mar. xv.
20. Joh. xix.

And

Golgotha. And it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, Anno
Joh. xix. 21. and Latin. Then ſaid the chief Prieſts Ætat. 33.
of the Jews to Pilate, *Write not, The* Miniſt. 4.
king of Jews; but that he ſaid, *I am*
22. *king of the Jews.* Pilate anſwered, *What*
I have written, I have written.

Mark xv. 25. * And it was the (†) third hour, and
Mat. xxvii. 38. they crucified him. *[b] Then were there [b] Mar. xv.
two thieves crucified with him, one on 27.
the right hand, and another on the left. Luk. xxiii.
Luk. xxiii. 34. * Then ſaid Jeſus, *Father, forgive them*; 33.
Mat. xxvii. 39. *for they know not what they do.* *[c] And [c] Mar. xv.
they that paſſed by, reviled him, wag- 29, 30, 31,
40. ging their heads, And ſaying, *Thou that* Luk. xxiii.
deſtroyeſt the temple, and buildeſt it in 35.
three days, ſave thy ſelf: if thou be the
ſon of God, come down from the croſs.
41. Likewiſe alſo the chief Prieſts mock-
ing him, with the Scribes and Elders,
Luk. xxiii. 35. ſaid, *[d] He ſaved others; let him ſave [d] Mat. xxvii.
himſelf, if he be Chriſt the choſen of 42.
Mar. xv. 32. *God:* * *Let Chriſt the king of Iſrael*
deſcend now from the croſs, that we may
Mat. xxvii. 43. *ſee and believe.* * *He truſted in God;*
let him deliver him now if he will have
him, for he ſaid, I am the ſon of God.
Luke xxiii. 36. * And the ſoldiers alſo mocked him,
coming to him, and offering him vine-
37. gar, And ſaying, *If thou be the king of*
the Jews, ſave thy ſelf.
39. [e] And one of the malefactors, which [e] Mat. xxvii.
were hanged, railed on him, ſaying, *If* 44.
thou be Chriſt, ſave thy ſelf and us. Mar. xv. 32.

(†) *Third hour*, that is nine of the Clock in the Morning.

But

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, *Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.* And he said to Jesus, *Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.* And Jesus said unto him, *Verily, I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.* Golgotha. 40. Luk. xxiii. 41. 42. 43.

* Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalen. When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, *Woman, behold thy son.* Then saith he to the disciple, *Behold thy mother.* And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home. 25. Joh. xix. 26. 27.

[a] Mat. xxvii. 45. Luk. xxiii. 44. [b] Mat. xxvii. 46.

* [a] And when the (†) sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the (‖) ninth hour, * And the sun was darkned. * [b] And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?* which being interpreted is, *My God, my God why hast thou forsaken me?* * Some of them that stood there when they heard that, said, *This man calleth for Elias.* * After this Jesus knowing that all things were now ac- 33. Mar. xv. 45. Luk. xxiii. 34. Mar. xv. 47. Mat. xxvii. 28. Joh. xix.

(†) *Sixth hour*, that is twelve of the Clock.
(‖) *Ninth hour*, that is three in the Afternoon.

compliſhed,

Golgotha. compliſhed, that the ſcripture might
Joh. xix. 29. be fulfilled, ſaith, *I thirſt*. Now there
Mat. xxvii. 48. was ſet a veſſel full of vinegar. * [c] And
ſtraightway one of them ran [d] and took
John xix. 29. a ſpunge, * [f] and put it upon hyſſop,
Mat. xxvii. 49. and put it to his mouth, * [f] The reſt
ſaid, *Let be, let us ſee whether Elias*
John xix. 30. *will come to ſave him.* * When Jeſus
therefore had received the vinegar,
Mat. xxvii. 50. * [g] [*And*] when he had cried again with
Luk. xxiii. 46. a loud voice, * he ſaid, *Father, into*
John xix. 30. *thy hands I commend my ſoul.* * *It is*
finiſhed: and he bowed his head, and
gave up the Ghoſt.
Mat. xxvii. 51. * And behold the vail of the temple
was rent in twain from the top to the
bottom, and the earth did quake, and
52. the rocks rent. And the graves were
opened, and many bodies of ſaints which
53. ſlept aroſe, And came out of the graves
after his reſurrection, and went into
the holy city and appeared to many.
54. [h] Now when the Centurion * which
Mar. xv. 39. ſtood over againſt him, * And they that
Mat. xxvii. 54. were with him watching Jeſus, * ſaw
Mar. xv. 39. that he ſo cried out, and gave up the
Mat. xxvii. 54. Ghoſt, [*and*] * ſaw the earthquake,
and thoſe things that were done, they
Luk. xxiii. 47. feared greatly, [*and*] * glorified God,
ſaying, *Certainly this was a righteous*
Mar. xv. 39. *man.* * [i] *Truly this man was the ſon of*
Luk. xxiii. 48. *God.* * And all the people that came
together to that ſight, beholding the
things that were done, ſmote their
49. breaſts and returned. And all his ac-
Mat. xxvii. 55. quaintance. * [k] And many women were

[c] Mar. xv. 36.
[d] Joh. xix. 29.
[e] Mat. xxvii. 48.
[f] Mar. xv. 36.
[g] Mar. xv. 37. Luk. xxiii. 46. Mat. xxvii. 50.
[h] Mar. xv. 39. Luk. xxiii. 47.
[i] Mat. xxvii. 54.
[k] Mar. xv. 40.

Anno Ætat 33. Minist. 4. [d]Mat.xxvii. 56. [e]Mat.xxvii. 55. Luk. xxiii 49.

were there (beholding afar off) *[d] among whom was Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of James the less, and of Joses, * and the mother of Zebedee's children, * and Salome [e] who also when he was in Galilee followed him, and ministred unto him; and many other women which came up with him to Jerusalem.

Golgotha. 40. Mar. xv. 56. Mat.xxvii. 40. Mar. xv. 41.

SECT. CXL.

The Burial of Jesus Christ.

THE Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day (for that sabbath day was a high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith there came out blood and water. And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true, that ye might believe. For these things were done that the scripture should be fulfilled, [*Psal.* xxxiv. 21.] *A bone of him shall not be broken.* And again another scripture saith, *They shall look on him whom they pierced.*

31. Joh. xix. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37.

* And

Golgotha. *[a] And now when the even was come Anno
Mar. xv. 42. (b because it was the preparation, that Ætat. 33.
Mat.xxvii. 57. is the day before the sabbath) *[c] there Minist. 4.
Luke xxiii. 51. came a rich man of Arimathea, * a city [a]Mat.xxvii.
Mark xv. 43. of the Jews, * an honourable counsel- 57.
lor, which also waited for the kingdom [b]Luk.xxiii.
Mat. xxvii. 57. of God, * named Joseph, who also 54.
Luke xxiii. 51. himself was Jesus's disciple. (* The [c]Luk. xxiii.
same had not consented to the counsel, 50.
Joh. xix. 38. and deed of them) (* being a disci-
ple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of
Mar. xv. 43. the Jews) * boldly came, [d] and went [d]Mat.xxvii.
John xix. 38. unto Pilate, [*and*] * besought Pilate 58.
that he might take away the body of Luk. xxiii.
39. Jesus. And there came also Nicode- 52.
mus (which at first came to Jesus by Mar. xv.43.
night) and brought a mixture of myrrh
and aloes, about a hundred pound
Mar. xv. 44. weight. * And Pilate marvelled if he
were already dead: and calling unto
him the Centurion, he asked him whe-
45. ther he had been any while dead. And
when he knew it of the Centurion,
Mat. xxvii. 58. * [e] Then Pilate commanded the body [e] Mar. xv.
Mar. xv. 45. } to be delivered * to Joseph. *He came 45.
Joh. xix. 38. } therefore and took the body of Jesus. Joh.xix.38.
Mat. xxvii. 59. * [f] And when Joseph had taken the body, [f]Mar.xv.46.
he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, Luk. xxiii.
Joh. xix. 40. * with the spices, as the manner of the 53.
41. Jews is to bury. Now in the place Joh.xix.40.
where he was crucified, there was a
garden, [g] and in the garden a new se- [g]Mat.xxvii.
Mat. xxvii. 60. pulchre, *which he had hewn out in the 60.
Joh. xix. 42. rock. * There therefore, because of the Mar. xv.46.
Garden of the Sepulchre. Jew's preparation day, for the sepulchre Luk. xxiii.
41. was nigh at hand, laid they Jesus where- 53.

in

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.
[a]Mat.xxvii. 61.

in was never man yet laid. * And he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. * [a] And Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of Joses, * which came with him from Galilee, * sitting over against the sepulchre, * [b] and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid, and they returned, and prepared spices and ointment; and rested the sabbath day, according to the commandment.

[b] Mar. xv. 47.

Garden of the Sepulchre. 60. Mat.xxvii. 47. Mar. xv. 55. Luk. xxiii. 61. Mat.xxvii. 55. Luk. xxiii. 56.

SECT. CXLI.

The chief among the Jews obtain a Guard of Roman Soldiers to secure the Sepulchre, which they seal up.

NOW the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief Priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, saying, *Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.* Pilate said unto them, *Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as sure as you can.* So they went and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

62. Mat.xxvii. 63. 64. 65. 66.

SECT.

Garden of the Sepulchre.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

SECT. CXLII.

On the Sunday early in the Morning the Women go to the Sepulchre, from whence they find the ſtone removed. They are informed by Angels that Jeſus is reſtored to life, and riſen again, with which they are commanded to acquaint his Apoſtles, who give no credit to it. Peter and John repair to the Sepulchre, which they find empty. Mary Magdalen ſees two Angels again in the Tomb, and afterwards Jeſus himſelf, with which ſhe acquaints the Apoſtles, who do not regard her.

Mar. xvi. 1. [a] AND when the ſabbath was paſt, [a] Mat. xxviii. 1. Luk. xxiv. 1. Joh. xx. 1.
2. } very early in the morning, *[b] as
Mat. xxviii. 1. } it began to dawn towards the firſt day
Mar. xvi. 2. of the week, came *[c] Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, [*who*] had bought ſweet ſpices, that they might come and anoint him: they came to the ſepulchre
Luk. xxiv. 1. at the riſing of the ſun, * bringing the ſpices which they had prepared, and
Mar. xvi. 3. certain others with them. * And they ſaid among themſelves, *Who ſhall roll us away the ſtone from the door of the*
4. *ſepulchre?* for it was very great. * And
Mat. xxviii. 2. behold, there was a great earthquake;

[b] Mar. xvi. 2.

[c] Mat. xxviii. 1. Joh. xx. 1.

for

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. (* [b] And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) * And they entred * into the sepulchre, * and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold two men stood by them in shining garments. * They saw a young man sitting on the right side, * His countenance was like lightning, [c] and his raiment white as snow. And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. * [d] And as [*the women*] were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth; * [e] the angel answered and said unto the women, *Fear not: for I know that ye seek Jesus* * *of Nazareth, which was crucified.* * [g] *He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: come, see the place where the Lord lay.* * *Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you, when he was yet in Galilee, saying, The son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.* * [h] *And go quickly and tell his disciples,* * *and Peter* * *that he is risen from the dead; and behold he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.* * And they remembred his words, * And they departed quickly from the sepulchre

Garden of the Sepulchre.

[b] Luk. xxiv. 2. Joh. xx. 1.
[c] Mar. xvi 5.
[d] Mar. xvi 5.
[e] Mar. xvi. 6.
[g] Mat. xxviii. 5. [e] Mar. xvi. 6.
[h] Mar. xvi. 7, 8.

4. Mar. xvi.
3. Luk. xxiv.
5. Mar. xvi.
3. Luk. xxiv.
5. Mar. xvi.
3. Mat. xxviii.
4. Mat. xxviii.
5. Luk. xxiv.
5. Mat. xxviii.
6. Mar. xv.
6. Mat. xxviii.
5. Luk. xxiv.
6.
7.
7. Mat. xxviii.
7. Mar. xvi. 7. Mat. xxviii.
8. Luk. xxiv.
8. Mat. xxviii.

Garden of the Sepulchre. Mar. xvi. 8. Luk. xiv. 9. with fear and great joy; * for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid, * and returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. 10. It was Mary Magdalen and Joana, and Mary the mother of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the Apo- 11. stles. And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them Joh. xx. 2. not. * Then [*Mary Magdalen*] run- neth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus lo- ved, and saith unto them, *They have taken away the Lord out of the sepul- chre, and we know not where they have* 3. *laid him.* [b] Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to 4. the sepulchre. So they ran both toge- ther; and the other disciple did out- run Peter, and came first to the sepul- 5. chre. And he stooping down, and look- ing in, saw the linen clothes lying by Luk. xxiv. 12. * themselves; * yet went he not in. Then 5. } Joh. xx. 6. } cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth 7. the linen clothes lie; And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped 8. together in a place by it self. Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, 10. and believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

* Mat. xxviii. 8.

[b] Luk xxiv. 12.

from

Annò Ætat. 33. Mensis 4.

from the dead. Then the disciples went away again unto their own home. * Wondering at that which was come to pass. * But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre, And seeth two angels in white, sitting the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain: And they say unto her, *Woman, why weepest thou?* She saith unto them, *Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.* And when she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith unto her, *Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou?* She supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, *Sir, if thou hast born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.* Jesus saith unto her, *Mary*, she turned her self, and saith unto him, *Rabboni*, which is to say, *Master*, Jesus saith unto her, *Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father, and to my God, and your God.* Mary Magdalen came and told that disciple, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

Garden of the Sepulchre.
10. Joh. xx.
12. Luk. xxiv.
11. Joh. xx.
12.
13.
14.
15.
16.
17.
17.

Garden of the Sepulchre.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

SECT. CXLIII.

Mary Magdalen tells the Apostles that she had seen Jesus, but they give no credit to her. Jesus appears a second time to several women.

Mar. xvi. 9. NOW when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalen, out of
10. whom he had cast seven devils. And she went and told them, that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.
11. And they when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her,
Mat. xxviii. 9. believed not. * And as [*the other women*] went to tell his disciples, behold Jesus met them, saying, *All hail.* And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then said Jesus unto them, *Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.*
11. Now when they were going, behold some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief Priests all
12. the things that were done. And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, saying,
13. *Say ye, His disciples came by night and*
14. *stole him away, while we slept. And if this comes to the governours ears, we*
15. *will persuade him, and secure you.* So they

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

Garden of the Sepulchre. Mat. xxviii.

SECT. CXLIV.

Jesus appears to Peter, and a fourth time is seen by two Disciples, as they were going to Emmaus. He appears fifthly to the Eleven Apostles, whom he upbraids for their Infidelity, and gives them several Instructions as to the publishing the Gospel.

Luk. xix. 13.

HE [*i. e. Jesus*] was seen of Cephas. * [2] After that, unto two of them, as they walked * that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs, And they talked together of all these things which had happened. And it came to pass that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near [*and*] * he appeared in another form and went into the country * with them. But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him. And he said unto them, *What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk and are sad?* And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering,

5. 1 Cor. xv. 12. Mar. xvi. 13. Luk. xxiv. In the way to Emmaus. 14. 15. 12. Mar. xvi. 15. Luk. xxiv 16. 17. 18.

In the way to Emmaus. Luk. xxiv.

said unto them, *Art thou only a stranger in Jeruſalem, and haſt not known the things which are come to paſs there in theſe days?* And he ſaid unto them,
19. *What things?* And they ſaid unto him, *Concerning Jeſus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word*
20. *before God, and all the people: And how the chief Prieſts and Rulers delivered him to be condemned to death,*
21. *and have crucified him. But we truſted that it had been he which ſhould have redeemed Iſrael: and beſides all this, to day is the third day ſince theſe things*
23. *were done. Yea, and certain women alſo of our company made us aſtoniſhed, which were early at the ſepulchre: And when they found not his body, they came, ſaying, that they had alſo ſeen a viſion of angels, which ſaid that he was alſo alive.*
24. *And certain of them which were with us, went to the ſepulchre, and found it even ſo as the women had ſaid; but him*
25. *they ſaw not.* Then he ſaid unto them, *O fools, and ſlow of heart to believe all*
26. *that the prophets have ſpoken! Ought not Chriſt to have ſuffered theſe things,*
27. *and to enter into his glory?* And beginning at Moſes and all the Prophets, he expounded unto them in all the ſcriptures, the things concerning
28. himſelf. And they drew nigh unto the village whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone
29. farther. But they conſtrained him, ſaying, *Abide with us, for it is towards evening*

Anno Ætat. 33. Minift. 4.

Luk. xix. 43.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, *Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?* [a] And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, saying, *The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.* And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread, * neither believed they them, * Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut, where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus. * [b] Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat. * And as they thus spake, [c] Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, *Peace be unto you.* * And upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen. * But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he said unto them, *Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in*

In the way to Emmaus. 30. Luk. xxiv.

31.

32.

Jerusalem.

33.

34.

35.

[a] Mar. xvi. 13.

13. Mar. xvi.

19. Joh. xx.

[b] 1 Cor. xv. 5.

14. Mat. xvi.

36. Luk. xxiv.

14. Mar. xvi.

[c] Joh. xx. 19.

37. Luk. xxiv.

38.

Jeruſalem. *in your hearts? Behold my hands and* Anno
Joh. xx. 39. *my feet, that it is my ſelf: handle me,* Ætat. 33.
and ſee, for a ſpirit hath not fleſh and Minift. 4.
40. *bones, as ye ſee me have.* And when
he had thus ſpoken, he ſhewed them
Joh. xx. 20. his hands, and his feet, *and his ſide.
Then were the diſciples glad, when
Luk. xxiv. 41. they ſaw the Lord. * And while they
yet believed not for joy, and wondred,
he ſaid unto them, *Have ye here any*
42. *meat?* And they gave him a piece of a [c] Joh. xx.
43. broil'd fiſh, and of a hony comb. And 20.
he took it and did eat before them.
44. And he ſaid unto them, *Theſe are the
words which I ſpake unto you while I
was yet with you, that all things muſt
be fulfilled which were written * in the
law of Moſes, and in the Prophets,
and in the Pſalms concerning me.*
45. Then he opened their underſtanding,
that they might underſtand the ſcrip-
46. tures, And ſaid unto them, *Thus
it is written, and thus it behoved
Chriſt to ſuffer, and to riſe from the
47. dead the third day. And that, repen-
tance and remiſſion of ſins ſhould be
preached in his name among all nations,
48. beginning at Jeruſalem. And ye are wit-
49. neſſes of theſe things. And behold*

(*) The Jews divided the old Teſtament into three parts, the Books of Moſes, which they called *the Law*. The Prophets. And under the Pſalms they comprehended the Pſalms of *David*, the writings of Solomon, and Job, which are commonly called the Hagiographa, that is holy Writings.

ſend

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

send the promise of my Father upon you: Jerusalem.
but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, Joh. xx.
till ye be endued with power from on high.
* Then said Jesus to them again, *Peace* 21. Joh. xx.
be unto you; as my Father hath sent me,
even so I send you. * And he said unto 15. Mat xvi.
them, " Go ye into all the world, and
" preach the Gospel to every creature.
" He that believeth and is baptized, 16.
" shall be saved; but he that believeth
" not, shall be damned. And these signs 17.
" shall follow them that believe; in
" my name shall they cast out devils,
" and shall speak with new tongues.
" They shall take up serpents, and if 18.
" they drink any deadly thing, it shall
" not hurt them; they shall lay hands
" on the sick, and they shall recover.
* And when he had said this, he breath- 22. Joh. xx.
ed on them, and saith unto them, *Re-*
ceive ye the Holy Ghost. Whosoever sins 23.
ye remit, they are remitted unto them;
and whosoever sins ye retain, they are
retained. But Thomas one of the twelve 24.
called Didymus, was not with them
when Jesus came. The other disciples 25.
therefore said unto him, *We have seen*
the Lord. But he said unto them, *Ex-*
cept I shall see in his hands the print of
the nails, and put my finger into the
print of the nails, and thrust my hand
into his side, I will not believe.

SECT.

Galilee. Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

SECT. CXLV.

Jesus in fourth the sixth time by the eleven Apostles. He rebukes Thomas for his obstinacy.

Mat. xxvii. 16. Joh. xx. 26. THEN the eleven disciples went away into Galilee. * And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them; then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, *Peace be* 27. *unto you.* Then saith he to Thomas, *Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands: and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faith-*
28. *less but believing.* And Thomas answered and said unto him, *My Lord and*
29. *my God.* Jesus saith unto him, *Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.*

SECT. CXLVI.

Jesus appears a seventh time to some of his Disciples at the Lake of Tiberias, and foretels what shall befall Peter and John.

Sea of Tiberias.

Joh. xx. 1. AFter these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shew-
2. ed he himself. There were together Simon

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaniel of Cana in Galilee, the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, *I go a fishing.* They say unto him, *We also go with thee.* They went forth, and entred into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus saith unto them, *Children, have ye any meat?* They answered him, *No.* And he saith unto them, *Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find.* They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto Peter, *It is the Lord.* Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fishers coat unto him, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea. And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes. As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto them, *Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.* Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to the land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken. Jesus saith unto

Galilee. Joh. xxi. 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

Sea of Tiberias. Joh. xxi.

them, *Come and dine.* And none of the disciples durst ask him, *Who art thou?* knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus then cometh and taketh the bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these?* He saith unto him, *Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee.* He saith unto him, *Feed my Lambs.* He saith unto him again a second time, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?* He saith unto him, *Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee.* He saith unto him, *Feed my sheep.* He saith unto him the third time, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?* Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, *Lovest thou me?* and he said unto him, *Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee.* Jesus saith unto him, *Feed my sheep.* "Verily, verily I say unto thee, When "thou wast young, thou girdest thy "self, and walkedst whither thou "wouldest: but when thou shalt be "old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, "and another shall gird thee, and car"ry thee whither thou wouldest not. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, *Follow me.* Then Peter turning about,

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, *Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?* Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, *Lord, and what shall this man do?* Jesus saith unto him, *If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.* Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, *If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?* This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

Sea of Tiberias. Joh. xxi. 21. 22. 23. 24.

SECT. CXLVII.

Jesus is seen the eighth time to the eleven Apostles, upon a Mountain: instructs them in divers particulars concerning their Ministry.

[*Then the eleven disciples went*] into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. And Jesus came and spake to them, saying, *All power is given unto me in heaven, and in earth. Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever*

16. Mat. xxviii. 17. 18. 19. 20.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

ever I have commanded you: and lo I am with you always even to the end of the world. Amen.

At the Sea of Tiberias.

SECT. CXLVIII.

Jesus is seen the ninth time by five hundred Disciples; the tenth by James; the eleventh by all the Apostles; a twelfth and last time by the same, whom he again commissions to publish the Gospel, and instructs in several things relating to it, and afterwards in their sight ascends up into Heaven. The Conclusion.

AFter that [*Jesus*] was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. After that he was seen of James, then of all the Apostles. * To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God: And being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, *Ye have heard of me. For John truly baptized with* water,

6. 1 Cor. xv.
7.
3. Acts i.
4.
5.

Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

water, but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost, not many days hence. When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, *Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?* And he said unto them, *It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. But ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost parts of the earth.*

At the sea of Tiberias. 6. Acts i. 7. 8.

* And he led them out as far as to Bethany: and he lift up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

Bethany. 50. Luk. xxvi.

* Mar. xvi. 19. 51.

* And when he had spoken these things while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight, * and sat on the right hand of God.

9. Acts. i. 19. Mar. xvi.

* And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel, which also said, *Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.* * And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: * from the mount called Olivet, which

10. Acts i. 11. 25. Luk. xxiv. 12. Acts i.

is

Mount Olivet. is from Jeruſalem, a (†) ſabbath days journey. * And were continually in the temple, praiſing and bleſſing God.

Anno Ætat. 33. Miniſt. 4.

Mar. xvi. 20. * And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with ſigns following.

Joh. xx. 30. * And many other ſigns truly did Jeſus in the preſence of his diſciples, which are not written in this book.

Joh. xx. 31. But theſe are written, that ye might believe that Jeſus is the Chriſt the ſon of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name.

Joh. xxi. 25. And there are alſo many other things which Jeſus did, the which if they ſhould be written every one, I ſuppoſe that even the world it ſelf could not contain the books that ſhould be written. *Amen.*

The End of the Fourth year of Chriſt's Miniſtry.

(†) *Sabbath days journey*, That is two Miles, for it was not lawful for the Jews to go more on the Sabbath day.

28 SE60

FINIS.